



DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 13

Su Yue Xi

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

Su Yue Xi

(火星引力)

Synopsis

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1201 – Heavenly Vision realm!

Jiang Chen wasn't interested in any of those chit-chatting outside, he didn't want to hear any of them. All of his concentration had been put in the Great Divination Art.

In a twinkle of an eye, a day has passed. All of a sudden, Jiang Chen opened his eyes. They were so bright they looked like dazzling stars in the night sky.

A dimly discernible aura of divination spilled out of Jiang Chen's body, making him look incomparably divine. His dark hair fluttered even without the breeze. His fingers were trembling as light was glowing from his fingertips.

"I have already reached the Spiritual Wisdom realm. I could consider this as a success in the early stage. Sure enough, the Great Divination Art is extremely profound. I spent one day and had only comprehended a trace of its essence, which got me to the early-stage realm."

Jiang Chen smiled, realizing how difficult the process of cultivating the great art was. Of all the cultivation method and combat techniques that he had cultivated in the past, none of them was as challenging as this.

If Tianji Zi was present, he was afraid that his master would pass out straight away because this was the result that he got after spending a year and a half. Jiang Chen however used only a day to complete it. Such a blow would be too much for him to stomach.

Not only him, any of the past cultivators of the Great Divination Art would also stand like a petrified corpse if they learned that Jiang Chen only took one day to reach the early stage of the Great Divination Art.

It was undoubtedly a miracle, the greatest miracle that had ever happened in the history of Great Divination Art to have such an

achievement. It was highly likely that not even the creator of the Great Divination Art had imagined that someday, a junior would achieve such a result in just one day.

“Once one reached the Spiritual Wisdom realm, one can calculate the good and bad things that will happen in the future. I’ll try looking into my future to see if I will face any great danger in the Evil Abyss.”

Jiang Chen muttered to himself and immediately, he circulated the Great Divination Art. After prying into his future for a while, he felt the urge to spew out blood. It was just like what Tianji Zi said—his fate had gone beyond the scope of the divination. Even with his Spiritual Wisdom realm, he wasn’t able to predict any future that was related to him.

“Dammit! What’s so mysterious about my fate? It must have something to do with the dragon transformation skill. I wonder how closely I am related to the ancient divine dragon.”

Jiang Chen started to have doubts about his own identity, but whether it was the dragon transformation skill or the ancestral dragon, both had always remained mystical. Despite the long period of time that he had spent on cultivation, he still couldn’t decipher the essence of his cultivation technique.

Since he couldn’t see his future, he might as well stop doing it. Anyway, he had just cultivated the earliest stage of the Great Divination Art and his future wasn’t much of a concern for him. Even if he could predict some very dangerous circumstances that he would face in the Evil Abyss, he would still proceed with his journey, because he wasn’t a man who would easily give up.

As for the secret of the dragon transformation skill, he would continue digging it. Regardless of whether his life was out of the scope of divination or not, there was one thing that he was certain about—that he would surely gain plenty of benefits by cultivating the dragon transformation skill.

“There are still two days to go. Maybe I can reach the Heavenly Vision realm. If I can really reach that stage, I will be able to use the Great Divination Art in battle just like master. I’m truly expectant of this.”

Jiang Chen stopped the unproductive divination and focused his attention on cultivation. Currently, if he turned into his dragon form, he could easily kill a half-step Divine Immortal expert, but once he advanced to the Heavenly Vision realm, he could even fight an early Divine Immortal expert. It would be a trump card that could protect his life, especially in a place like the Evil Abyss.

As for the Heavenly Will and Divination realm, he had casted them out of his mind after experiencing the deadly moment with the Divination Map. It was extremely difficult for one to cultivate such a supreme and profound secret art. Perhaps, given his talent and luck, he was able to reach the early stages in a short period of time, but the two later stages definitely wouldn’t be as simple anymore.

Once one reached the Heavenly Vision realm, a trace of divination aura would start to linger around the person. In between one’s eyes was an acupoint named Uranus Point. In order to reach the Heavenly Vision realm, one had to make use of the divination Qi of Spiritual Wisdom to break the Uranus Point. By doing so, the divination Qi would accumulate into that point and eventually, pushing one’s realm to the Heavenly Vision realm.

The process of breaking the Uranus Point wasn’t easy, but Jiang Chen wouldn’t give up on it—his usual attitude towards life.

Tianji Zi was observing the situation inside outside of the courtyard, but he didn’t know what was happening inside as he couldn’t see through the walls. If he knew that Jiang Chen had already reached the Spiritual Wisdom realm and was advancing to the Heavenly Vision realm, no one would know how he would react.

To Jiang Chen, the Uranus Point was a closed pool surrounded by solid barriers. Certainly, it wasn't an easy task to break past those barriers.

What Jiang Chen needed to do now was to circulate the Great Soul Derivation Technique, use his powerful soul power and divination Qi of the Spiritual Wisdom realm to violently smash against the barriers of Uranus Point. Once he succeeded on this, it would be considered as a success.

Tianji Zi had cultivated for more than half of his lifetime to reach this stage, and just advanced not so long ago, which gave him the advantage over Yang Shu in battle.

Hu... Hu...

There were storms created by Jiang Chen's soul around the Uranus Point. It slammed against the barriers one wave after another, but the walls were as solid as steel. It remained intact and showed not a single line of crack after many rounds of banging.

"Damn! This sure is a difficult procedure!"

Jiang Chen wiped off his sweat and swore. In spite of the difficulty, he continued banging at the Uranus Point.

In the remaining two days, he had been smashing against the Uranus Point. As a matter of fact, the most fundamental condition to enter the Uranus Point was to attack non-stop. He had to keep on using his powerful soul energy and divination Qi to smash against the acupoint until it broke.

Ordinary experts would never possess such a powerful soul force. More importantly, they wouldn't be able to support the incessant attacking. Once one stopped attacking somewhere in between, the damaged barriers of Uranus Point would repair itself, making all the previous efforts in vain. This was why Tianji Zi had spent a large portion of his lifetime to get to this level.

Jiang Chen however have the greatest advantage in this aspect.

His Great Soul Derivation Technique was able to continuously provide him the soul energy to constantly hit the Uranus Point.

Chapter 1202 – Setting Off

It was everyone's dream to cultivate the Great Divination Art, but not everyone could realize this dream. Jiang Chen, however, was a special case. Having lived two lives in the Mortal World, he had an extraordinary advantage compared to the others.

Hu... Hu...

After two days of continuous effort, the outer barrier of Uranus Point had become very thin. Presently, every strike from the soul energy caused the barrier to tremble intensely and it seemed like it would break at any time.

Outside the courtyard, Tianji Zi glanced at the sky, and then pushed open the front gate of Jiang Chen's courtyard.

"It has already been three days, I wonder how that kid is doing."

Tianji Zi's heart was filled with anticipation. He strode towards Jiang Chen's room and pushed open the door.

Just as he pushed open the door of Jiang Chen's room, Jiang Chen broke past the barrier of the Uranus Point. Massive soul energy and divination Qi rushed into Jiang Chen's Uranus Point like the tides of the ocean, causing his glabella to glow brightly.

At the same time, a certain type of Qi radiated out from Jiang Chen's body. It was the divination Qi, which was now denser and stronger than before. Although it seemed ethereal, one could sense it with clarity.

The scene that Tianji Zi saw made him stagger and he almost fell to the ground. He gaped at Jiang Chen unblinkingly. His body shivered and he was at a loss of words.

This scene was too familiar as he had just experienced this not long ago. The glowing Uranus Point and strong divination Qi indicated the breakthrough in Heavenly Vision realm. Regardless of how unacceptable it was to him, he had to admit that Jiang

Chen had achieved the second stage of the Great Divination Art. Apparently, his mind still wasn't convinced that this wasn't a dream.

“This is impossible. Absolutely impossible. I must be dreaming.”

Tianji Zi couldn't stop shaking his head as he muttered to himself. As a mighty Golden Immortal expert, he had shaped his disposition and mind to a certain level of resoluteness, but at this present moment, it seemed as if he had lost all of his composure.

He could never imagine that this was real as he had spent almost all of his life to reach such a stage. Jiang Chen, however, only used three days to have such an achievement. Truly, this wasn't a joke. If he didn't saw this scene personally, he would never believe it.

In fact, even after seeing it with his own eyes, he still found it hard to believe or even accept.

After successfully breaking through, Jiang Chen noticed Tianji Zi's presence. He took in a deep breath and opened his eyes. Instead of feeling exhausted after the continuous consumption of soul energy, he felt charged-up and vigorous. He stood up from the cushion and came before Tianji Zi.

“Master.”

Jiang Chen greeted, but found out that Tianji Zi wasn't responding. He lifted his head and saw Tianji Zi was still in a trance, still immersed in his own world.

Ai!

Jiang Chen couldn't help but sigh in his heart. He deeply understood what Tianji Zi currently feel. Initially, he intended to conceal the truth by telling Tianji Zi that he had only reached the Spiritual Wisdom realm, to avoid bringing too much psychological blow to Tianji Zi. However, he hadn't thought of the possibility that his master would barge in right at the moment when he made the breakthrough.

“Master.”

Jiang Chen called for the second time. Finally, Tianji Zi regained his senses. He now looked at Jiang Chen like how he would look at a monster and spoke in a slightly quivering voice, “You-you have advanced to the Heavenly Vision realm?”

Tianji Zi still didn’t sound convinced.

“Yes, master. Disciple is fortunate enough to advance to the Heavenly Vision realm. Master should be happy for me,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

Naturally, Tianji Zi would feel happy for his disciple’s achievement. In fact, his endorphins were currently flooding his body. Although Jiang Chen had dealt a deadly blow to him, viewing this incident from a different angle indicated his good eyesight for picking this monstrous talent as his disciple.

“Three days... you son of a b*tch used only three days to reach the stage that took me half of my lifetime. You are truly a monstrous one. Fortunately, you’re my disciple, otherwise, I would surely be driven crazy.”

Tianji Zi’s excitement had been stirred up. There was no way that he could maintain his calm as he started to see hope on Jiang Chen. He even had an intuition that he would see Jiang Chen reaching the last stage of the Great Divination Art one day. It was supposed to be unrealistic at first, but now it had become highly probable.

“It was just luck. Although I have reached the Heavenly Vision realm, I still have yet to grasp the two later stages. I’m afraid that I will need a long time and a certain fortune to make a breakthrough in the Heavenly Will realm.” Jiang Chen said.

What he said was the truth. He was already very satisfied with his current condition. As for the later stages, it could only depend on his fortune.

“You are surely a rare and an unusual genius that only emerge once every ten thousand years. No wonder even master is envious of you. Speaking of that, even this old man is beginning to envy you. Since you have already cultivated to the Heavenly Vision realm, you will surely be able to circulate this secret art in battle. It will certainly be a great help for you during critical moments in the Evil Abyss.”

Tianji Zi expressed his admiration for Jiang Chen. In his point of view, he had picked up a real treasure—Jiang Chen. He was sure that Jiang Chen’s future achievements would surpass Tian Muyun’s.

He also believed that a man like Jiang Chen would never achieve ordinary results in the future. Although Tian Muyun was a legendary figure in One-Line-Sky, comparing his talent to Jiang Chen’s was like day and night. Jiang Chen was like the son of the Heavens, a figure who would keep soaring up to the sky. So, a small place like One-Line-Sky would not be able to satisfy his needs for long.

“Master, three days have passed. I’m already well prepared to go into the Evil Abyss now,” said Jiang Chen.

Now that he had cultivated the Great Divination Art, he was very interested to find out about the Evil Abyss. The tough-training there would be beneficial to his growth.

“That’s right. I will bring you to see master now. He will open the Evil Abyss for you. Once you enter the Evil Abyss, stay alert at all times. Although you have an incredible talent, you are still very weak and it is very hard to survive in that kind of place. A minor carelessness will put your life in jeopardy.” Tianji Zi reminded Jiang Chen like a caring elderly.

“Disciple understood.”

Jiang Chen nodded, and then called out to Big Yellow before heading towards the Evil Abyss.

Chapter 1203 – The Dragon Travelling Across the Ocean

Big Yellow was rocking his head back and forth as he walked out of the room. Within just three days, he had advanced to another level—late Heaven Immortal realm. Such advancement speed was undeniably scary.

The lotus leaf was naturally a very good herb, but viewing this from the aspect of essence, it was all because of Big Yellow's incredible bloodline. If he was replaced by a normal person, he wouldn't be able to have such rapid advancement even if that person was given plenty of lotus leaves.

After reaching the late Heaven Immortal realm, Big Yellow's combat strength had become truly strong. No ordinary half-step Divine Immortal expert could be a match for him now. Even if he encountered an early Divine Immortal expert, he wouldn't have a problem dealing with the opponent. As they were entering the notorious Evil Abyss, the stronger they became, the better it was.

With Jiang Chen's current combat strength and with the help of the Great Divination Art, his power was equal to an expert who had just broken through to the Divine Immortal realm. Taking Big Yellow, Ah Da and Ah Er who were hidden in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda into account, their overall strength was equal to four Divine Immortal experts. As such, it was less likely for them to have any problems should they encounter any dangerous opponents in the Evil Abyss.

“Are we leaving?”

Big Yellow had a look of excitement on his face. For a being who was afraid of a peaceful world, he was particularly interested in places like the Evil Abyss.

“This is a very unusual dog.”

Tianji Zi looked over at Big Yellow and couldn't help but praise. In fact, he had already noticed the extraordinary qualities of this dog ever since Big Yellow repaired the Iron Dummy Array. What was even more surprising for him was Big Yellow's advancement speed. Three days ago, he clearly remembered that Big Yellow was merely a mid Heaven Immortal expert, but today, this dog had broken through to the late Heaven Immortal realm. Undeniably, it was rare for someone to have such a terrifying growth.

He sighed thinking how abnormal this pair of man and dog was. As the saying went, 'birds of the same feather flock together', abnormal beings would always be in an abnormal group.

"Let's go to find master now," said Tianji Zi, but as soon as his words faded, a silhouette emerged on the mountain all of a sudden. The incomer had a very extraordinary demeanor. If he wasn't Tian Muyun, no one would be able to tell who he was.

"Master."

Seeing Tian Muyun, Tianji Zi and Jiang Chen immediately greeted him. No matter how much Jiang Chen hated Tian Muyun, he felt compelled to display his gentle and polite side, as there was still a huge gap between his current strength and Tian Muyun's. It was necessary for him to hide his intention very well, so that it wouldn't arouse the notice of the pavilion master.

"Jiang Chen, are you really sure that you want to go to the Evil Abyss? There's still time, if you still have some hesitations. I won't force you into it."

Tian Muyun looked at Jiang Chen and said with a smile.

"Disciple has already decided and doesn't want to put the pavilion master in a difficult position. At the present moment, I'm afraid that everyone in Skycloud Pavilion has already known that I'm going to the Evil Abyss. If I change my mind now, it's going to ruin pavilion master's reputation. Disciple's life is nothing compared to pavilion master's face. Furthermore, disciple has also

decided this to be my tough-training,” said Jiang Chen in a neither haughty nor humble way. His words had placed Tian Muyun at the highest position.

Tian Muyun couldn't help but sigh. He couldn't tell why he felt defeated. Although he had admiration for Jiang Chen, he didn't have any affection for him.

“Alright, since you have already decided, I will unlock the passageway that will lead to the Evil Abyss for you.” Tian Muyun said.

A golden spiritual talisman appeared in his hand. It shone brilliantly and was filled with spatial aura. Even though he had already stepped into the half-step Immortal King realm, he was still far from fully mastering the spatial energy.

The spiritual talisman that Tian Muyun held right now was a spatial talisman, a talisman that would lead them to the Evil Abyss. Each major power of the big domains had this talisman. As Tian Muyun was the pavilion master of Skycloud Pavilion, the talisman would naturally be in his possession.

Hu... Hu...

Chilly wind howled. Very quickly, the talisman turned into a spatial gate. Anyone who sensed the cold and gloomy Qi that came out of the Evil Abyss would shiver.

Both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's radiant eyes fell upon the gate.

“Jiang Chen, get in quick. With my cultivation base, I won't be able to hold this passageway for long,” said Tian Muyun.

“Yes, pavilion master.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fists, and then turned into a silhouette and rushed into the spatial gate. Big Yellow followed from behind. In an instant, the two of them vanished.

Shortly after they disappeared, Tian Muyun kept the spiritual

talisman and left, while Tianji Zi was still staring at where they vanished.

“Kid, I hope you don’t let your master down.”

Tianji Zi desired to see Jiang Chen to come out of the Evil Abyss alive. And if that really happened, Jiang Chen would create another miracle again.

In the dark passageway, they were constantly feeling the variegated air current around them. Probably, the Evil Abyss was located right below One-Line-Sky as the passageway was slanting downwards.

The deeper they went, the denser the chilly and gloomy Qi became. Under the influence of such Qi, it could easily make people feel unpleasant and irritable, but this couldn’t affect them much as they had already experienced an even worse Qi back in the Devil World. The Evil Abyss naturally was full of danger, and there were still a lot that were unknown.

However, Jiang Chen was not scared of that, he had a few very powerful trump cards. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was his greatest trump card. The fourteen floors of the pagoda had already recovered after a period of recuperation. Although the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda couldn’t be used in battle yet, it could still be used to conceal themselves and protect their life. It was literally a rare divine item.

Moreover, after entering the Evil Abyss, Jiang Chen was no longer restricted by Skycloud Pavilion. He could now use the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. There was yet another powerful combat technique named Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes that could be used with the halberd. Given his current strength, he was capable enough to cultivate such a technique.

Since he had achieved his first objective which was to become a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion, he would need to grab every opportunity to improve his cultivation base and strength now. The

Evil Abyss was currently the best place for that.

Chapter 1204 – The Desperate Females

The passageway wasn't very long. Although it was regarded as an unusual spatial zone, it didn't exist independently from the Immortal World. The closer one got to the Evil Abyss, the more discomfort the dark and gloomy Qi caused.

As the chilly Qi ahead was getting thicker, a gleam of light was seen. It wasn't a strange situation to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, as this wasn't their first time travelling in a spatial passageway. It indicated that they were reaching the end of the passage.

“Almost there.”

Big Yellow's face was filled with excitement. The two of them hastily exerted force to control their bodies. They had already experienced the impact at the end of the spatial passageway many times. If they weren't careful enough, they would be hurled out by the spatial storm.

Bang!

Upon reaching the end of the passage, an immense force acted upon the both of them, throwing them outwards like a cannonball. Luckily, they had already been prepared for this. They forced their hurtling bodies to a stop in mid-air and landed steadily.

They were shocked as they scanned around the place. The sight of the Evil Abyss was very different from what they had imagined.

In their imagination, the Evil Abyss was a terrible place. Judging from the gloomy Qi before they reached the Evil Abyss, they thought that the situation in this place should almost be the same in the Devil World.

What they saw in front had blown their minds away. The place where they landed was a wilderness that was covered with weeds and withered vines and old and cloud-piercing trees. The fact that plants could be found everywhere indicated great vitality.

It should be late at night right now, but the sun was still shining brilliantly in the sky.

“Why does this place seem no different from the outer world and nothing like a human purgatory, except for the lingering killing intent? It even has a sun, moon and stars.” Big Yellow seemed slightly astonished.

“It seems like we have some misunderstandings about the Evil Abyss. The starry sky here should be related to the outer world, which explains why the condition here is almost the same outside. Here is just another world of its own. However, this also showed how dangerous and scary this place is. Since the Evil Abyss isn’t about the environment, then it must be about the atmosphere. Apparently, the evil and killing intent here will make anyone shiver.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glittered. Although there was nothing strange on the surface, the people that lived here was what made this place dangerous. This was a land filled with killings and evils. It had raised Jiang Chen’s alertness and also anticipation on this place.

“This should be the boundary of this place.” Big Yellow looked around once more and spoke.

“We don’t have to care about what area it is. The rule now is to be safe. Come on, let’s go over there to see what’s inside,” said Jiang Chen, and then he flew skywards, towards the deep wilderness.

The fact that it was at late at night now didn’t affect either Jiang Chen or Big Yellow because the time of the day was no longer their concern.

“This Evil Abyss sure isn’t small. It has to be at least millions of miles large. Typical spatial zones are normally not this big. It seems like there are plenty of evil forces here.”

Big Yellow sighed. This was something that not even Jiang Chen

had expected. They initially thought that the Evil Abyss was just another typical spatial zone with a few hundred thousand miles, tops. The size of the current spatial zone was similar to a big domain in the outer world.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen's pupils focused downwards. He could sense several human Qi below.

"There are people walking below. Let's head over there and check it out."

Jiang Chen said and proceeded to conceal his Qi and flew towards that direction, followed by Big Yellow from behind. They had just arrived at the Evil Abyss and as such, they basically knew nothing about the status of the place. It would naturally be good if they could gather some information from someone else.

Below were two flustered silhouettes, with one at the front and the other behind, running in high speed. Both were females dressed in shabby clothes and with pale faces. Apparently, they were suffering serious injuries. Their eyes were filled with despair as they felt the Qi behind them was getting closer.

They were left with no choice other than running. If they were captured by the person behind them, what greeted them would be a fate worse than death.

Both of them had a similarity—their beauty. The one in blue looked very attractive and beautiful, as if she was the most beautiful female in the world. Their cultivation had already reached the early Heaven Immortal realm. At this level, they could already travel in the air, but they didn't dare to do so, given their severe condition. With the help of the lush of trees and vines, there was still a chance for them to escape, but if they flew in the air, they would instantly be overtaken.

"Hehe, you two girls, you can't get away from me. You should just yield obediently."

A ghastly laugh was heard from behind as it continued to approach them.

Barf!

The girl in black spewed out a mouthful of blood. She was so badly wounded that she couldn't support her running anymore. She could only walk by relying on the help of the blue-clad girl.

"How do you feel, Sister Ying?" The blue-clad girl showed a face of concern.

"Sister Qingcheng, run on your own. I can't go any further. I will only slow you down. Quickly run now. I will stall those beasts for you."

The girl in black shook off the blue-clad girl's arms, ready to deal with the pursuers.

"No, if you get caught, you will suffer horrendously. I can't let you die for me." The girl in blue shook her head and said sentimentally.

"Go now!" The girl who was called Sister Ying roared.

"Haha! Sentiments... unfortunately, neither of you can get away."

The voice was getting closer. All of a sudden, four experts emerged. All of them were Heaven Immortal experts wearing black clothes. Two were mid Heaven Immortal experts while the other two were early Heaven Immortal experts. Even if those two girls didn't suffer any injuries, they wouldn't be able to deal with these four opponents.

Seeing what happened, the two girls were in total despair. After fleeing for so long, they still couldn't escape the evil grip of these people.

Chapter 1205 – Big Brother Jiang

They were in despair, in deep despair. There would only be suffering, and ultimately, death that awaited them if they were captured. To any woman, that kind of place was a nightmare, a horrendous nightmare which they couldn't wake up from. If they failed to break free from the grip of these abductors, they would rather kill themselves than being captured again.

“Sister Qingcheng, it seems like we're going to die in this wilderness today.”

The girl in black looked at the girl in blue with a bitter smile.

“I would rather die here than be brought back to that place.”

Qingcheng gritted her teeth. A trace of resoluteness flickered in her eyes. That kind of place was somewhere they should never go to. In that place, death was a luxury.

She looked up at the starry sky and found out that today's stars seemed dimmer and lacked its usual luster.

“Big Brother Jiang, it seems like Qingcheng can't see you again,” she murmured with a faint smile on her face.

She couldn't help but feel warmth when she thought about her Big Brother Jiang. This blue-clad girl wasn't a stranger. She is Yan Qingcheng. She kept thinking about Jiang Chen ever since he left Yan City, so she had decided to come to One-Line-Sky to look for Jiang Chen to avoid this becoming an eternal regret in her life. However, she had never thought that her fate would become as such. Today, she was only moments away from death. Though she still desired to meet Jiang Chen once more, she knew that it would only remain a wish.

“Big Brother, these two b*tches are going to kill themselves.” A man in black said in a mocking tone.

“It's impossible for them to commit suicide in front of us

brothers as they don't even have the strength to kill themselves. These two are extraordinary beauties, especially that one. Our Young Master will definitely like them."

"More importantly, they are virgins, which is very rare to find. If Young Master plucks them, his combat strength will surely improve drastically."

"Cut the nonsense and bring them back now."

The four black-cladded men decided the two girls' fate verbally. As a matter of fact, this was the truth. Given the girls' strength, they didn't even have the ability to end their own life. It was true despair when a person had lost even the right to end his/her own life.

"Big Brother Jiang, Qingcheng will ensure that my corpse is intact after I die. We'll meet again in the next life."

Yan Qingcheng was a spirited woman. She quickly drew out a sharp short blade and launched it at her throat. The four pursuers were shocked as they had never thought that the girl would actually kill herself. With her speed, there wasn't enough time for them to stop it.

One should know that it required extreme courage to end one's own life and not everyone possessed such courage.

Pa!

There was another person who didn't wish to see Yan Qingcheng die more than the four of them. Just as the short blade was about to cut through the skin of her throat, a hand stretched forward and gripped her hand, stopping the movement of the blade entirely.

Yan Qingcheng despaired when she realized her suicide attempt failed. Could it be that she didn't have the strength to kill herself?

"Sister Qingcheng, shouldn't you ask for my opinion first before killing yourself?"

The teasing voice sounded very familiar to her, like the voice that she constantly hear in her dreams. It sent chills down her body, as if she had been struck by lightning.

Slowly, she opened her eyes, turned her stiff head and saw a brilliant smile in front of her. That was a smile she would never forget, it made her feel like she had been dreaming.

“Big... Big Brother Jiang.”

Yan Qingcheng’s tone was somewhat quivering. She couldn’t believe that this was true.

“Big Brother Jiang, is this really you or has Qingcheng been dreaming?”

Qingcheng was having a hard time controlling her emotions. It was imaginable why she was having such feelings. She had left Yan City in search for Jiang Chen, but by accident, she entered this Evil Abyss. Bearing the final despair, she didn’t expect her life to be rescued, what she desired was just to say goodbye to her beloved one, hoping to meet him again in the next life.

It was totally beyond her imagination that the person she longed to see appeared before her.

“Of course, it’s me. I have come. So don’t ever think of dying anymore,” scoffed Jiang Chen.

He had no idea why Yan Qingcheng was here in the Evil Abyss, but there must be a reason to it. Anyway, the most important thing was that he arrived at the most critical situation, or else the consequences would be unimaginable.

“Big Brother Jiang!”

Yan Qingcheng could no longer hold her emotions. She promptly ran into Jiang Chen’s embrace and cried. All the depressed emotions and desperation were finally released all at once. At this moment, Yan Qingcheng wasn’t that Big Miss of Yan City anymore, but a girl with feminine qualities.

No matter how strong and resolute a female was, she would always have a fragile side, a side she would only show to certain individuals.

“Ai!”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but sigh. All along, he had regarded Yan Qingcheng as a passer-by in his life. Even now, he had never thought of anything more than that as he already had Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu and he didn't wish to date another girl.

From what he saw just now, he could confirm that this girl was deeply in love with him, just like before.

Putting aside her feelings, he couldn't watch her die like this given the relationship he had with her. Since he had met one of his old friends, he couldn't deny helping her.

That girl in black was astounded by Jiang Chen's emergence and how Yan Qingcheng reacted. She knew that Yan Qingcheng had been finding her loved one in One-Line-Sky, but was inadvertently sent to the Evil Abyss. Now it seemed like this good-looking youth in white was no doubt the man Qingcheng had been looking for.

“Who are you, kid? Let that girl go at once and kneel down before us and wait for your death.”

A man in black clamored coldly. They didn't expect that a man would suddenly appear out of nowhere to interrupt their business and ignore their existence. Since this man had shown himself in front of them, he would only face one end—death. One should know that this was the Evil Abyss, anyone could kill here without reason.

Jiang Chen lifted his head, stared at the four men with eyes so cold it could destroy people's soul, and spoke plainly, “I suppose you are the ones who granted her these injuries?”

Chapter 1206 – Plain Speaking

One word and one look from Jiang Chen was enough to deter his opponents from advancing forward.

His tone was plain and he didn't seem to show any insolence in his eyes, but the deterrent force he projected was like an invisible mountain. The four of them must admit that this white-clad youth had given them the creeps. They could feel their soul virtually freezing the moment Jiang Chen stared at them.

Instinctively, they could tell how scary this youth was. In order to survive in the Evil Abyss, they relied not only on their cultivation base because it wasn't strong enough. After living for so long in this place, they had already sharpened their survival skills. Despite their ferocity and cruelty, they knew who were those they could offend and those they couldn't afford to provoke.

“Fellow brother, we are only following the orders of Lascivious Young Master. I hope that you won't choose to oppose Lascivious Young Master.” The leader of the four spoke.

“What? Lascivious Young Master? The name is obscene by itself. What good can you get by following a lascivious dude? Why don't you follow master dog. If the four of you become my slaves and serve me well, master dog surely will reward you whenever master dog is happy. Your benefits will be boundless at that time.”

When Big Yellow heard the name, he almost choked to death. The person with this name must have a very lewd mind and heart.

“Humph! Where did this dog came from? How dare he disrespect us!”

One of the man in black harrumphed coldly, seemingly disgusted by Big Yellow. Due to all their attention having focused on Jiang Chen, none of them noticed this dog. If it wasn't because of Big Yellow's eye-opening remark, they would have regarded him as

air.

“You ugly sh*t, do you know that speaking to master dog in such a way will put your life in danger?” Big Yellow threatened.

“Answer my question, are you all the ones who cause her these injuries?”

Jiang Chen’s tone was incomparably cold. He had already locked on their positions with his Qi. After bullying Yan Qingcheng, their fate had already been decided.

“So what? Kid, how dare you display your arrogance in front of us? You are going to die as well anyway. Our boss has already given you the chance but you didn’t know how to cherish it. These two girls are our Young Master’s women. Anyone who interferes in Lascivious Young Master’s business in this region is equal to asking to get killed.”

An early Heaven Immortal man spoke proudly. There were too many incidents that led to bloodshed because of a minor disagreement. They had lost count of how many times their hands had been stained with blood. It wasn’t an exaggeration to describe their hands as the executioner’s hands. They were used to running their business on this land. They didn’t believe that someone would be stupid enough to go against Lascivious Young Master.

“It’s good that you all have admitted it. Big Yellow, I will leave the rest to you then.”

Jiang Chen revealed a cold smile at the corner of his mouth. Jiang Chen couldn’t bear seeing Yan Qingcheng being hurt. He must make these four and that Young Master pay for what they did. Perhaps, dealing with Lascivious Young Master was the first thing he should do in the Evil Abyss.

Jie... Jie...

Big Yellow had an insidious laugh, he then lunged at the black-clad man who reprimanded him.

A strong momentum was released from his body. Immediately, they were amazed because they could feel the Qi of a late Heaven Immortal realm and this was coming from a demonic beast. They were certainly no match for him.

“Argh.....”

Big Yellow’s sturdy body pounced down at lightning speed. There was no room for resistance. That man in black let out a cry of surprise before he was hurled to the ground. Two pairs of Big Yellow’s sharp claws penetrated his shoulders and into the ground.

At the present moment, the man’s face was filled with fear. Despite him having killed plentiful people, he had never tasted the feeling of being on the other side. Being an early Heaven Immortal expert, he was as good as dead while being targeted by Big Yellow.

“No, don’t kill me.”

The man was scared to death. No one wanted to die. The closer one got to the edge of death, the more fear and horror one would feel. He began to feel numbness and acute pain from his shoulders.

Such pleading however wouldn’t work on Big Yellow. He opened his big maw and tore off the man’s head. Blood gushed out. The man’s body made a few twitches before it died.

Hiss...

Seeing what happened, the remaining three black-clothed men sucked in a breath of cold air. Even those two mid Heaven Immortal experts had already turned pale. Big Yellow’s ferocity and ruthlessness had petrified them. They had now lost all the will to fight this dog.

The girl who was called Sister Ying opened her mouth wide, she couldn’t believe what was just happened in front of her. This young man and that big yellow dog who suddenly appeared were terrifyingly rare beings.

However, this also relieved her worries, sweeping away all of her

despairing thoughts. She would now be saved from the hands of the evils.

“Run.”

Without saying a word, the leader spun and fled. The remaining two hastily followed. In the face of such a scary big yellow dog, they had no other way to deal with it other than running away.

“Jie Jie, if the likes of you can run away from master dog, then master dog will lose all of his reputation.”

Big Yellow’s ferocity was ignited. He leaped forward and chased after the two men in black. Each claw landed on their shoulders. A violent impact force accompanied by two miserable wails, smashed the two of them to pieces; their body parts scattering around on the ground.

In front of Big Yellow, a mid Heaven Immortal expert was no different than an early Heaven Immortal expert. Even if the opponent was a late Heaven Immortal expert, he could still kill that opponent straightaway.

Even though the leader had already flown away, he still couldn’t escape from Big Yellow’s pursuit, because Big Yellow was just too fast. He caught up with the black-clothed man in an instant and slammed his diamond head against the man’s head.

It was a pity that the man couldn’t even let out a wail before his skull was crushed. His body then fell from the sky, breaking one of the big trees.

It took less than three minutes for Big Yellow to kill the four of them. The whole process was as effortless as chopping melons and vegetables.

Chapter 1207 – Yan Qingcheng’s Bitter Experience

Four incomplete corpses were lying on the ground. The air was filled with a nose-stinging stench of blood. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow seemed very fine with it, but Yan Qingcheng and her companion were showing unpleasant faces.

“Are you alright, Qingcheng?” Jiang Chen comforted Yan Qingcheng.

“Big Brother Jiang, it’s great to see you here.”

Yan Qingcheng regained her composure and left Jiang Chen’s embrace. Her face couldn’t help but turn red when she thought about being in his arms, but as she had had lots of experience as the Big Miss of Yan City, she recovered pretty fast from an emotional breakdown.

“Big Brother Jiang, this is Sister Huang Ying.”

Yan Qingcheng introduced the woman in black to Jiang Chen, and then spoke to her, “Sister Ying, this is Big Brother Jiang that I mentioned before.”

Huang Ying neared Jiang Chen and saluted deeply, “Thank you very much, Young Master Jiang for saving us. I can never repay your kindness to me. If Young Master Jiang didn’t save us, I wouldn’t be able to imagine what consequences Sister Qingcheng and I would face.”

“There’s no need to be this polite, Sister Ying. Since I saw your situation, I have to take care of it. Besides, you are Qingcheng’s friend,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“I have heard a lot about Young Master Jiang from Sister Qingcheng. After today’s incident, I can confirm that Young Master Jiang surely is a rare genius.”

Huang Ying smiled faintly. She had a dignified demeanour, like she was once a young mistress of a major power. However, none of them knew why she ended up here. Jiang Chen didn't ask because her condition wasn't very good. It was apparent that she had been forcefully keeping her body from falling down while suffering serious injuries. If she wasn't treated soon, the repercussion would be unthinkable.

Not just Huang Ying, Yan Qingcheng too was suffering heavy injuries. So, the current priority wasn't to debrief them, but to heal them instead.

"Sister Ying, Qingcheng, both of you have been wounded quite badly. I should treat you two first," said Jiang Chen.

Then, he placed his hands on their wrists and channeled tremendous amount of wood spiritual Qi into them like a fountain.

Hiss

The sudden rush of wood spiritual Qi had given them maximum comfort. It was like a dried lake suddenly receiving a massive amount of rain.

Yan Qingcheng seemed fine. Although she still was astonished, this wasn't her first time knowing Jiang Chen. She knew that Jiang Chen was a miracle and that he had plenty of abilities and trump cards.

However, Huang Ying's facial expression and the way she looked at Jiang Chen changed completely. Before this, she only heard about Jiang Chen's stories from Yan Qingcheng, and the battle just now was fought by Big Yellow, which meant that she hadn't gotten the chance to witness Jiang Chen's true abilities until now.

However, she had lost her calm during the healing process, she was crystal clear of how serious her injuries were. Her injuries were fundamentally impossible to be healed in such a short period of time, even by consuming some miraculous pills, but Jiang Chen

only used his spiritual Qi to instantly ignite the vigour in her body. Whether it was internal or external injuries, the healing process could be observed by her naked eyes.

“Don’t speak.”

Jiang Chen warned when he saw Huang Ying’s mouth opening. Immediately, Huang Ying shut her mouth and refocused on the healing process.

The wood spiritual Qi was surging into their bodies extravagantly. At this moment, Huang Ying felt even more surprised because half of her injuries had already been healed in just a few minutes. She knew very well now how important and beneficial this spiritual Qi was.

What an amazing young man! If I didn’t experience this personally, I wouldn’t be able to believe it.

Huang Ying couldn’t help but sigh. Then, she thought of how Yan Qingcheng had praised Jiang Chen in front of her. It turned out that Qingcheng was right.

Ten minutes later, Jiang Chen removed his hands off their wrists. Yang Qingcheng and Huang Ying adjusted their breathing before opening their eyes. After being healed by the wood spiritual Qi, both of their condition had been completely restored. Whether it was their expression or Qi, they all looked vibrant.

Huang Ying bowed to Jiang Chen and said, “This is truly a miracle. Young Master’s means is undoubtedly profound.”

“That’s of course. Sister Ying, you don’t know about Big Brother Jiang’s other abilities yet. Now that Big Brother Jiang has come to the Evil Abyss, this place is destined to have a bloody storm,” said Yan Qingcheng with confidence.

After leaving Yan City, her temperament had changed a little. She wasn’t acting like a haughty Big Miss anymore. Furthermore, she had met the one she longed to meet. So, instantly, she had

turned herself into a humble and empathizing lady.

“Qingcheng, how did you come to this place?” Jiang Chen asked.

This was what he had been most curious about. Yan Qingcheng was born and raised in Yan City. There was no way she would be dragged into the Evil Abyss. It puzzled him that the famous Big Miss of Yan City would get stuck in a place like this.

“Big Brother Jiang, not long after you left Yan City, I have advanced to the early Heaven Immortal realm. Then, I decided to leave Yan City and head over to One-Line-Sky in search for you. Unexpectedly, I have encountered a spatial storm half-way in my journey. The next thing I knew, I was blown in here,” replied Yan Qingcheng.

She shuddered when she recalled all the encounters during this period. As the Big Miss of Yan City, she had always been provided a comfortable place to live. The Evil Abyss was too dangerous for her to stay.

When she talked about leaving the Yan City in search for Jiang Chen, she kept one line in her heart – she couldn’t forget Jiang Chen. That was the main reason she wanted to find Jiang Chen, she wanted to pursue her own happiness.

Ai!

Jiang Chen couldn’t help but sigh. This was another girl full of infatuation. He knew very well the feelings she had for him, which was also the reason he left Yan City as soon as possible. To him, whether it was Yan City or Yan Qingcheng, both were merely a passer-by in his life. He had concluded that they would never see each other again from the moment he left Yan City, but fate obviously wasn’t in line with his thought, letting the two of them see each other again in such a dangerous place.

As the Evil Abyss was full of danger, he couldn’t allow himself to watch Yan Qingcheng suffer alone here.

“It seems like the Evil Abyss is connected very closely to the outer world and there may be even no separation between the two. This domain should be beyond the law of space, otherwise, the spatial storms wouldn’t exist,” said Big Yellow.

Chapter 1208 – The Lord of Evil

“That’s right. The Evil Abyss is a space of special existence and isn’t completely isolated from the outside world, so it shouldn’t be regarded as a atypical spatial zone. Once there is massive changes in air current or if there’s any great movements, different degrees of storms will be created outside. Some of them who had poorer luck will be blown away by the spatial storms into the Evil Abyss. Sister Qingcheng and I are the example people with bad luck.”

Huang Ying smiled bitterly. Big Yellow was right. The Evil Abyss wasn’t a true atypical spatial zone. It wasn’t a separated world like the Inferno Hell in Qi Province. But it was rare for people to be blown into the Evil Abyss because most of these spatial storms would only appear in desolate areas. As such, those who were swept into the Evil Abyss by the spatial storm could only be labelled as the extremely unlucky group.

As a matter of fact, there were also lots of lucky ones like the two of them in Evil Abyss.

“It seems like not everyone in the Evil Abyss is a ferocious being. There are still some who were brought in by the spatial storms.” Jiang Chen heaved a sigh.

“Yes. Normally, those who are like us will be oppressed once they got here and won’t live for long, because there are evils and killings everywhere. It’s very hard for any of us to survive.” Said Huang Ying in a somewhat sentimental tone.

“Big Brother Jiang, why have you come to the Evil Abyss?”

Yan Qingcheng asked with curiosity. Back when Jiang Chen left Yan City, he had gone to One-Line-Sky. She hadn’t even dreamt that she would actually meet Jiang Chen here.

“I was sent here as a punishment and also as a tough-training.”

Jiang Chen shrugged, then told his story in Skycloud Pavilion to

the two, causing them to roll their eyes.

“Big Brother Jiang, every place you go will always lose its peace. You have already caused such a big uproar in such a short period of time.”

Yan Qingcheng felt somewhat speechless, however, this was the Jiang Chen that she exactly knew. The Jiang Chen who would leave an eternal mark on every place he went.

“But Young Master Jiang, the situation in the Evil Abyss is rather complicated. Here is far more dangerous than the outside world. There are dangers and threats everywhere. Being a little careless will give the others the chance of killing you.” Huang Ying shook her head.

“Isn’t there an exit to the outside world here?” Asked Jiang Chen curiously.

“There is, but the passageway is controlled by some very powerful people. It is virtually impossible for any ordinary people to walk out of here alive.” Said Huang Ying.

Jiang Chen was dumbfounded after knowing the complex situations in the Evil Abyss. He didn’t imagine that there was actually someone blocking the exit.

“Sister Ying, tell us more about the situation in this place.”

Said Jiang Chen. As he had just arrived here, he didn’t know much about this place. He initially thought that this was similar to Inferno Hell, so he didn’t give many thoughts to it. But now, it seemed like it wasn’t that simple. There might even be major powers that existed in the Evil Abyss.

As Huang Ying was brought in earlier than Yan Qingcheng, she knew the status in the Evil Abyss better than anyone. It was necessary for Jiang Chen to gain a better understanding of the place first, he might be staying here for a period of time.

“There are no rules in the Evil Abyss. The strongest and most

powerful are humans. They are different species that is either demon or devil. The blood that flows in their body is the blood of evil. They are born to commit crimes. The more people they kill, the higher the crimes they committed which also gives them higher cultivation base. They claim to be the Evil Clan and this place is named after them.”

Huang Ying explained. Whenever she mentioned the Evil Clan, fear was revealed on her face.

“In the past, the Evil Abyss was the kingdom of Evil Clan. Everyone who was sent into the Evil Abyss for punishment or those innocent experts who were brought in here by the spatial storms would become the prey of Evil Clan. All of them ended up pretty badly. But this pattern changed ever since the Evil Lord came. By establishing his own forces, he eventually forced the Evil Clan into the depths of the Evil Abyss. Later, he had set up a system, but of course, it was basically useless here. All these years, humans and Evil Clans had been clashing with one another. The Evil Clan longed to get rid of the Evil Lord so that they could rule the Evil Abyss once more, at the same time, the Evil Lord didn’t stop launching attacks at the Evil Clan, desiring to take full control of the Evil Abyss, but none of their dreams had ever been realised.” Huang Ying had a very deep understanding of the situation in the Evil Abyss.

“Evil Lord?”

Jiang Chen’s eyes brightened up, instantly developing a deep interest in this Lord of Evil.

“Currently, half of the Evil Abyss has already been occupied by mankind. There are different divisions in these territories, namely outer area, middle surrounding and interior surrounding. Each division consist different forces and competitions. Right now, we are at the outer area of territory. The forces here isn’t big, but it is still equally dangerous compared to the other divisions. Most of the humans here are violent and ferocious, those who don’t have

these qualities will die.” Huang Ying spoke.

“Does Sister Ying know what the Evil Lord’s cultivation base is?” Asked Jiang Chen curiously.

“I’m not very sure about this. My strength is still far from approaching the land where Evil Lord lives, but the fact that the Evil Lord could force the Evil Clan into the depths of the Evil Abyss indicates that his cultivation must be, at least at the early Immortal King realm.” Said Huang Ying.

“Early Immortal King realm? There isn’t even an Immortal King expert in One-Line-Sky. It seems like the Evil Abyss sure is extraordinary.”

Jiang Chen revealed a trace of a smile. He was now filled with anticipation. Now, it seemed like this place would be even more interesting than Inferno Hell. He always liked this kind of feeling, it only meant that his trip here wasn’t in vain.

Chapter 1209 – Lascivious Young Master

Big Yellow shook his tail continuously, seemingly very excited. He and Jiang Chen fell under the same category – they loved stimulation and intensity. On the contrary, he would lose all his interest if the Evil Abyss was too peaceful and quiet.

Huang Ying continued talking a bunch of stuffs about the Evil Abyss, giving Jiang Chen and Big Yellow a thorough understanding of the place. In conclusion, there were two kinds of competition here: humans versus the Evil Clan; and, humans versus humans.

Despite having the Evil Clan as their great enemy, one shouldn't expect the humans here to be united because that wasn't possible. Any human who was sent into this place wasn't a kind person. They not only wanted to fight and kill the Evil Clan, but also their own kind.

“Since the Evil Lord is so powerful, why did he come to the Evil Abyss when he could've live comfortably as an Immortal King in the outside world?”

Yan Qingcheng was baffled. In her eyes, the Immortal King realm was an unreachable, supreme realm. Such a peerless expert could've lead a life as he pleased. It raised doubts for such an expert to end up in such a place.

“Sister Qingcheng, in a man's point of view, it's all about his desire and ambition to rule a place. In addition, there are abundant resources and treasures here, giving him another reason why he should gain hegemonic control over this world,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

Although he didn't know the true intention of Evil Lord, he was pretty clear about a man's wild ambition. If a person could become the ruler of Evil Abyss and defeat the Evil Clan, that would give him a great sense of achievement. And because of this sense of

achievement, it would bring enormous benefits to the expert's cultivation base and domain.

“By the way, Sister Ying, why were those black-clothed men chased after you two just now? And who is this Lascivious Young Master that they were talking about?” asked Jiang Chen.

This was the most crucial question at the moment as this Lascivious Young Master had already become his first target since he arrived here.

Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying's faces darkened when they heard the name. Apparently, the name reminded them of their nightmares.

“A thousand miles from here is a city. It had no name originally, but later on, it was given the name of Lascivious City and was governed by Lascivious Young Master. This young master was born with obscenity and he cultivates an obscene cultivation law. No one knew how many girls had been ruined by his hands. He is a true ferocious creature. Not long ago, when Sister Qingcheng and I passed by Lascivious City, some people couldn't keep their eyes away from us, and since then, they chased after us all the way until here. If it wasn't for Young Master Jiang's rescue, I wouldn't be able to imagine what would happen to us. Our suffering would certainly be horrendous if we were captured and brought back to the city,” said Huang Ying. Thinking about the consequences if they were captured made her body shiver.

After listening to what Huang Ying said, Jiang Chen couldn't help but heave a sigh of relief. Luckily, they didn't enter the city straightaway, otherwise they would surely fall into that lascivious dude's hands.

Jiang Chen was now sure that the Lascivious Young Master was the one he would deal with first. He hated those who were obscene and lascivious the most. Moreover, they had to pay a high price for hurting Yan Qingcheng. Due to the Evil Abyss having no rules,

anyone who was stronger would be king and the weak ones would be eliminated and become the stepping stones of the king.

“Big Yellow, it seems like we’re going to target this Lascivious City first.”

Jiang Chen shrugged and revealed a trace of a smile.

“Does Young Master Jiang want to fight Lascivious Young Master? I think Young Master Jiang better not go there. Although Young Master Jiang has incredible talent, but you are still weak. And, even though Lascivious Young Master is obscene by nature, he is a very strong expert, or else he wouldn’t be able to rule a city.”

Huang Ying warned. She basically had already seen Jiang Chen’s cultivation base – a mere half-step Heaven Immortal expert. Even the powerful big yellow dog was only a late Heaven Immortal realm. How could they possibly fight against Lascivious Young Master?

“How strong is that Lascivious Young Master?” asked Jiang Chen.

“Lascivious Young Master has already reached the mid Divine Immortal realm. He also has a few early Divine Immortal experts as his guards. Given our strength, we will only end up dead by confronting them head-on,” said Huang Ying.

“Mid Divine Immortal realm?”

Jiang Chen frowned. With his current cultivation, even if he transformed into his dragon form, he could only eliminate a half-step Divine Immortal opponent. If he used the Great Divination Art, he might be able to fight an early Divine Immortal expert, but it wouldn’t be easy to kill the opponent. So if he confronted a mid Divine Immortal expert, he basically had no chance of victory.

“Although the odds are really small, but since we have come, we can’t let that dirty dude rule freely. Big Yellow, what do you think

if we go and meet this lascivious dude?” Jiang Chen looked over at Big Yellow.

“He definitely isn’t scaring me.”

Big Yellow licked his mouth. Normally, he would be the first to deal with this kind of matter.

Seeing Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s determination to fight Lascivious Young Master, both of the girls’ facial expression changed. Huang Ying thought that Jiang Chen was only saying it for fun. Although Jiang Chen’s boldness was very impressive, boldness alone was not enough to beat Lascivious Young Master.

“Young Master Jiang, do you really want to go to the Lascivious City?” Huang Ying sounded unconvinced.

“Of course. After what they had done to the two of you, they should pay a price for that,” answered Jiang Chen.

He then opened the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying were still not fit to fight given their present cultivation base. So, the only thing he could do for them was to protect them well. The moment he found a chance to connect to the spatial passageway, he would send them to the outside world.

Hu... Hu...

A wave rushed out from the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda as the door opened.

“Sister Ying, Qingcheng, go into the pagoda now,” said Jiang Chen.

The two of them were astonished as they were clueless about the use of the portal. As Yan Qingcheng trusted Jiang Chen 120%, she walked into the pagoda without hesitation. Huang Ying followed from behind after that, knowing that Jiang Chen wouldn’t harm them.

“My God! There is actually such a huge space inside here. And we

can even see what's going on outside clearly. It's amazing! Can't believe that Young Master Jiang actually has such a treasure.”

Huang Ying was shocked. What she saw was unbelievable because not even the revered Immortal Emperor possessed this kind of treasure, let alone a puny half-step Heaven Immortal expert.

Chapter 1210 – Havoc in Lascivious City

Just as Jiang Chen opened the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, two streams of formidable power surged out of the pagoda, and two burly figures emerged from it. Without a doubt, these two were Ah Da and Ah Er.

“Ah! The dense Qi is mingled with evil and devil essence, which is perfect for me. I will surely going to advance soon.”

“That’s right. The environment here is too good. I’m going to make a breakthrough in my cultivation too under such stimulation.”

Ah D and Ah Er were incomparably excited, and then, their Qi began to rise, rushing towards the realm of Divine Immortal. Ah Da and Ah Er were Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bulls that were violent and vicious by nature. Furthermore, because of the devil essence in their bodies, it made them connect with the Qi in the Evil Abyss.

Moreover, the both of them had already consumed the lotus leaves, pushing their cultivation to the half-step Divine Immortal realm, however, its effect hadn’t been exhausted yet. When the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was opened and they were exposed to the evil Qi of the Evil Abyss, their cultivation was instantaneously boosted to early Divine Immortal realm.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow perked up upon seeing the situation in front. Before this, they had no certainty in winning the battle. What they wanted was just to meet the Lascivious Young Master. But now, they had a favourable turn. If Ah Dad and Ah Er advanced to the early Divine Immortal realm, they would perhaps be capable enough to deal with Lascivious Young Master. After all, the both of them were twin brothers. Once the two of them coordinated flawlessly in battle, it would improve their overall strength by more than double and would allow them to fight an opponent one level higher than them. Perhaps, this would make

them a worthy opponent of Lascivious Young Master. Therefore, their advancement to the early Divine Immortal realm was truly a good thing to Jiang Chen.

In the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Huang Ying and Yan Qingcheng were putting all of their focus on Ah Da and Ah Er.

“Never thought that Young Master Jiang has such powerful helpers.”

Huang Ying’s admiration for Jiang Chen’s means grew profusely. She could clearly sense the power of Ah Da and Ah Er, but she still didn’t think it was enough to fight Lascivious Young Master. After all, the young master was already a mid Divine Immortal expert. Even if there was only a level of difference, it was still a tremendous gap.

The stimulation Ah Da and Ah Er received was massive. Immense amount of energy surged into their bodies. In just a matter of a dozen minutes, both of them successfully advanced to the early Divine Immortal realm. They had now become a true Divine Immortal expert.

“Master, this place is so great,” Ah Da said to Jiang Chen.

“Alright. Ah Da, Ah Er, now that you have both advanced to the Divine Immortal realm, follow me to Lascivious City and wreak havoc there. If we are able to conquer the whole city, you are free to take the benefits inside there,” Jiang Chen said.

“Thank you master.”

Ah Da and Ah Er had a look of anticipation. For beings like them who were only afraid of a peaceful world, battling was their favourite activity. They had been stifled in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda all this while. If they didn’t come out from it to move their limbs, their bodies were going to be rusty.

“Let’s go.”

Subsequently, Jiang Chen rose to the sky and headed towards the

direction pointed by Huang Ying. Big Yellow was flying next to Jiang Chen while Ah Da and Ah Er were following behind them closely. Now that they were already in the Evil Abyss, there was no need for him to hide his trump cards anymore.

Huang Ying was slightly astounded to see Jiang Chen fly, even though he hadn't reached the Heaven Immortal realm yet. But after that, she recalled that Yan Qingcheng had told her that Jiang Chen had already acquired the ability to fly when he was only a Human Immortal expert. So, this shouldn't be much of a surprise. However, she was afraid that this legendary and mysterious man was going to bring an even greater shock to them.

Departing from where they were to the city was a thousand miles of a distance, but to Jiang Chen and the rest, such a distance was only equivalent to a few blinks of an eye.

The night was dark and windy. Normally, extraordinary things would happen at such a night. But in the Evil Abyss, virtually every night was similar to this.

Soon, a city became visible in front of them. It wasn't a large city. It seemed to be only a hundred miles in size. The city wall gave the viewer the feeling of brand-new, like it was just built in recent years. Comparing this wall to the other ancient city walls, it lacked the Qi of steadiness.

The city was nameless as no plaque was found around the front gate of the city. There were also no guards and rules.

Of course, any rules and laws would be useless in the Evil Abyss.

Jiang Chen and the others had broken into the city unhindered.

"Big Yellow, start making some noise here," Jiang Chen said.

"No problem!"

Big Yellow shook his body and spat out a huge fireball towards the long stretch of buildings below him.

Hong Long...

As the huge fireball landed on the ground, it immediately turned into a sea of fire. Such movement and brightness was too distracting and dazzling in the middle of the night. It was impossible that it wouldn't attract anyone's attention.

Big Yellow however wasn't satisfied with one fireball. He opened his mouth and continued to spit out fireballs. Every fireball destroyed a stretch of buildings, and in a twinkling of an eye, the entire Lascivious City had turned into chaos. They could hear wails from below. Those who were in the buildings were smashed to death on the spot. Those who successfully escaped were fazed by the incident.

Ka... Ka...

Big Yellow cackled pleasantly. None of them had any sense of guilt watching all these citizens die, because most of them were vicious and ungrateful beings that ought to be dead long ago. Moreover, it was just too normal for anyone to die in the Evil Abyss.

"What's going on? Who's wreaking havoc in Lascivious City?"

"F*ck! How dare they come here to cause trouble! Are they tired of living their lives? Kill them!"

.....

Noises of people scolding others filled the air. Plenty of powerful figures had flown out from different directions of the city and surrounded Jiang Chen and the rest. As most of them were Heaven Immortals and weren't idiots, they fled immediately when they sensed the Divine Immortal Qi radiating from Ah Da and Ah Er's bodies. Anyone who was familiar with the norm of the Evil Abyss knew that no one would display threats easily, but once a person or group dared to attack, they wouldn't hesitate to kill.

"Kill all of them," Jiang Chen said plainly.

Since they had already come to the city, they had to make sure that the city was stained with blood.

“Yes, master.”

Ah Er acted on the command without delay.

Chapter 1211 – How Disgusting!

“Argh!” “Argh!”

Instantly, screams and cries sounded. The Heaven Immortal experts who rushed out didn't even have the chance to escape. Their bodies were split to different pieces and mist of blood filled the air.

Huang Ying and Yan Qingcheng saw everything clearly from the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Although it wasn't their first time seeing Big Yellow's ferociousness, the scene still made them shudder. It was just too brutal, however, they knew very well that brutality was a very common thing in Evil Abyss.

Numerous people in the city were shocked by what they saw. There would always be strife within every city in the Evil Abyss and it was common for someone to attack a city. Last time, Lascivious Young Master also used the same method to conquer this city. Now that another bunch of barbaric beings had emerged, every one of them knew that there wouldn't be peace tonight.

When the word was spread to the prefecture, plenty of experts rushed out. The Heaven Immortal experts who were originally prepared to fight the intruders were scared away by Big Yellow's ruthlessness. Although it was nothing to die in the Evil Abyss, no one would choose to die if they could live.

Swoosh... Swoosh... Swoosh...

Several more powerful figures flew out from the prefecture and stopped before Jiang Chen and the rest. There were a total of five of them. Four of them were early Divine Immortal experts with similar Qi – the Qi of ferociousness. Even their faces looked violent and fierce, displaying the impression of unfriendliness.

The leader was the one in glamorous bright-red robes embroidered with flowers which made him look special if there

were others who wore the same robe.

He seemed to be in his twenties. His face was filled with gentleness and his lips were thin and red. He had brows that curled upwards. His eyes were full of obscenity and he lacked the masculine Yang energy. In other words, he was packed with Yin energy.

For a man like him, no matter how good-looking he might be, his grotesque physical appearance would always disgust anyone at first glance.

The identity of this enchanting man was already evident. He was Lascivious Young Master. The Qi radiated from him was more powerful than the other four experts. It was the Qi of a mid Divine Immortal expert, the true and number one expert in Lascivious City.

His eyes were fixed on Jiang Chen the moment he appeared. By just using his eyesight, he could discern that Jiang Chen was the weakest but was also the leader of the group.

“How audacious you are for coming to my place to cause trouble,” Lascivious Young Master said in an incomparably soft tone that caused discomfort and goose bumps to listeners.

“Ai! Your obscene appearance already explained why you are called ‘Lascivious Young Master’, which suits you pretty well.” Jiang Chen feigned a groan.

“Humph! A puny little half-step Heaven Immortal has brought three demonic beasts to wreak havoc in my city. I have no idea if it was because my name isn’t scary enough or your brains had been fried. Brat, I don’t care who you are, you will have only one path – death for killing my people and destroying my city. Due to me having a good mood today, I don’t want to get my hands dirty, I’ll give the four of you the choice to commit suicide in front of me.”

Lascivious Young Master harrumphed coldly and said in a

dignified tone. Surely, he didn't put Jiang Chen in his eyes as the gap between them was just too great. No comparison could be made between a half-step Heaven Immortal and a mid Divine Immortal.

"You four trash! Didn't you hear what our young master said? Our young master wants you all to kill yourselves now. This will be his biggest mercy to you all. Kowtow now to express your thanks, then go to hell."

An early Divine Immortal expert next to Lascivious Young Master said in a demanding tone. As soon as these words were spoken, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow spurted out a mouthful of blood. Even Ah Da and Ah Er found it difficult to accept. How could some people claim that demanding others to kill themselves was an act of kindness and mercy?

"F*ck! For God's Sake! There's nothing much to say with these people anymore. Eat Master Dog's fart!"

Big Yellow couldn't take it anymore. Dealing with this kind of people required no talking but action.

He turned his sturdy body abruptly and aimed his big and fleshy buttocks at them. They were dumbfounded for a while before getting infuriated. To them, it was a direct act of blasphemy. It was totally a humiliation to not put them in his eyes.

"Courting death! Kill this dog, skin it and stew it."

One of the experts said, but before he had time to respond, Big Yellow's Peerless Fart had exited into the air.

Hong Long...

The sound of the rumble was like the nine-day thunderbolt. The vibration of the volume was deafening. A huge cloud of green air current formed on their heads before exploding into a spectacular black mushroom cloud.

[Puking]

The next moment, everyone including the Lascivious Young Master threw up on the scene. Big Yellow's fart was an irresistible and unacceptable weapon. Anyone who received this attack without preparation would face serious consequences. Even if it couldn't kill you, it could disgust you to death.

“Dammit! This dog's fart is terribly smelly. Barf...”

“F*ck you dog! You are smoking me to death.....”

“A*shole! How could there be such a disgusting fart in the world?!”

.....

The Divine Immortal supreme experts had lost all their dignity. All of them were throwing up like crazy. Despite Lascivious Young Master being the fastest to respond to the fart, he still couldn't escape from the cloud of green air that made him puke constantly.

It was true that Big Yellow's Peerless Fart was incredibly powerful, but it couldn't deal any serious damage to the Divine Immortal experts. So what Big Yellow intended was just to influence their confidence level psychologically.

“Wakaka! Doesn't Master Dog's fart taste good?” Big Yellow laughed unrestrainedly.

Ah Da, Ah Er and the two girls in the pagoda were observing the whole situation. They were afraid that only Big Yellow could create this kind of prank, and such prank made him invincible.

“Haha! Lascivious Young Master, do you think you can be more disgusting than my Peerless Fart just because you are called a lascivious dude?”

Jiang Chen laughed loudly while witnessing the self-proclaimed obscene young master being defeated by Big Yellow's fart.

“Ah!”

The Lascivious Young Master roared furiously. Violent blood-red

light rushed out of his body, blowing away all of Big Yellow's fart in an instant.

Chapter 1212 – The Strength of Barbaric Bulls!

Lascivious Young Master had gone completely mad when he was made fun of by a dog in his own territory. Furthermore, it was done in such a disgusting way, and it had brought him great insult. Today, with so many people watching from below, if he didn't kill all these fanatics, he would surely lose all of his face.

“Damn dog! Die now!”

Lascivious Young Master struck out a large blood-red palm all of a sudden that pressed against Big Yellow like Mountain Tai.

Roar...

Big Yellow's fighting spirit had been ignited, revealing all the ferocity in his body. He didn't have the slightest fear despite facing a mid Divine Immortal expert. His roar rumbled like a dragon's roar throughout the sky. Countless golden rays gushed out from his body, making him look divine and magical. The Qi of a Divine Beast that was unleashed from his body was astonishing.

A golden halo appeared above his head. The size of his body was doubled in an instant. He didn't dare to show any neglect while confronting a mid Divine Immortal opponent as he was merely a late Heaven Immortal expert.

Since he had already decided to stir up some troubles in Lascivious City, he had to first display all the momentum that he got.

With his current unparalleled condition, he smashed against the large blood-red palm with his head.

“Overconfidence.”

Seeing what happened, Lascivious Young Master couldn't help showing a hint of a sneer. To him, what Big Yellow did was no

different than seeking death. Using just the skull to meet his attack? Wasn't that an act of disdaining his attack?

Hong Long.....

The huge blood-red palm landed heavily on Big Yellow's head, producing a deafening roar. During the impact, innumerable lines of crack appeared on the blood-red palm. Big Yellow's head had always been his most powerful weapon and it was incomparable to any kind of ordinary Immortal Weapon.

Although cracks became visible on the surface of the palm, Big Yellow wasn't in a favourable situation either. His huge body was thrown several hundred meters away, but because of his powerful physique, he was able to halt his body with a twist.

"Damn! This lascivious dude sure is powerful."

Big Yellow pounded his muddled head to stop his head from spinning. As the difference between them was just too great, Big Yellow was already considered freaking awesome to come out unharmed.

"What?"

Lascivious Young Master's facial expression changed dramatically and exclaimed. Not just him, the other four early Divine Immortal experts widened their eyes as well, astounded, not able to believe what they had just seen. They knew very well how powerful that strike was. They couldn't believe that Big Yellow actually blocked it.

"Bugger! How can this dog's head be so hard?"

"This is... damn! That's why some said weirdos exist. How could a dog's skull be this hard?"

"This dog is truly ferocious. It seems like he also has an incomparably strong bloodline. Luckily he is only an early Heaven Immortal expert. If he's a Divine Immortal, none of us will be a match for him."

.....

No one wasn't surprised. Although Lascivious Young Master had gained the upper hand, it didn't prevent him from being shocked by Big Yellow.

"Such a hard head, I'm going to break it no matter what."

His face turned resolute, he focused all of his attention on Big Yellow, ignoring the presence of Jiang Chen, Ah Da and Ah Er. The only way to regain his face and release his grudge was to crush Big Yellow's head.

"Ah Da, Ah Er, block him," Jiang Chen commanded.

"Yes, master."

Without saying another word, the both of them turned into two rays of light and blocked the path of Lascivious Young Master. The Qi of the Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bull had already been fully unleashed. When these twins cooperated in a fight, nothing else could beat their flawless coordination.

Ah Da and Ah Er were already early Divine Immortal experts and if they joined forces, they would be capable enough to deal with a mid Divine Immortal opponent. Although Lascivious Young Master is stronger than an ordinary mid Divine Immortal expert, the two of them wouldn't have a problem stopping him.

Jiang Chen had always been the most experienced one when it came to battle. His initial intention was to cause a great mess in Lascivious City, so that the young master would have something to worry about, but after he saw the drastic improvement of Ah Da and Ah Er, he changed his mind to conquering the city.

His current gaze were fixed at the four early Divine Immortal experts because two of them were demonic beasts like Ah Da and Ah Er. Now that his foundation had become strong and solid, as long as he could refine the demon soul of these two demonic beasts, his cultivation would be boosted to the early Heaven

Immortal realm.

Although this kind of advancement might have a certain impact on his foundation, it wasn't significant and he could recover from it easily. Once he advanced to the early Heaven Immortal realm, his combat strength would soar once more. By that time, it wouldn't be a problem for him killing the other two early Divine Immortal experts. Then, he and Big Yellow would join Ah Da and Ah Er, finishing this obscene dude off.

Jiang Chen would never do things that he wasn't certain of, especially in battle. And he wouldn't omit any factor. Additionally, with his Great Divination Art, it made his planning and calculation more precise. Before this, he had already done the calculation about Lascivious Young Master and he knew that this obscene guy was going to die today.

"These two barbaric bulls want to stop me from this? How idiotic!"

Lascivious Young Master didn't put Ah Da and Ah Er in his eyes. Immediately, he struck out two streams of bloody light at the two bulls.

Roar! Roar!

Ah Da and Ah Er were also ferocious and ruthless by nature. And besides, they had already advanced to the Divine Immortal realm, which made them unafraid of Lascivious Young Master. They unleashed their devil aura completely and formed two dark clouds, lunging at the young master.

Hong Long...

An intense battle of two versus one exploded, making the sky and land even darker. As Lascivious Young Master was more powerful and had a greater means of attack compared to any ordinary mid Divine Immortal expert, he managed to gain the upper hand at the first exchange.

However, that wasn't important. What was important was that despite Ah Da and Ah Er failing to gain the upper hand over their opponent, they wouldn't be defeated for a period of time. In other words, Lascivious Young Master was going to get entangled in an unending battle.

Chapter 1213 – Battle Strategy

“Never thought these two barbaric bulls are so hard to deal with. But sooner or later, you two are going to die in my hands. The four of you, get rid of that presumptuous kid and dog.”

Lascivious Young Master gave the command to the other four experts. He knew that the degree of cooperation between these two bulls had already reached the perfect state. Due to the both of them being twin brothers, their minds and hearts were interlinked, which boosted their overall strength by more than two folds or to an even greater extent.

“Yes.”

The four early Divine Immortal experts responded; then they locked on Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s position. One humanoid beast studied the two of them for a while and then said to other three comrades: “You three, finish that dog off. Make it fast. Leave this presumptuous kid to me.”

“Roger.”

The other three experts lunged at Big Yellow without saying another word. Apparently, they didn’t want to waste any time. They besieged Big Yellow, leaving him no room to escape.

To them, assigning the three of them to deal with Big Yellow while the other one finish Jiang Chen off made the battle meaningless. The two of them, especially Jiang Chen would be beaten to death in less than ten seconds. The early Divine Immortal beast that handled Jiang Chen felt that it was an insult for him to deal with a half-step Heaven Immortal expert.

However, this was exactly the formation that Jiang Chen expected to see. If two were sent to deal with him, he wouldn’t have any chance of winning. Even with the help of the Divination Art, he would find it very difficult to fight against an early Divine

Immortal opponent because of his low cultivation base, but with the experience he had accumulated, it wouldn't be a problem for him to get rid of one opponent. Plus, this opponent was a demonic beast, the opponent he desired to fight the most.

As for Big Yellow, Jiang Chen didn't have the slightest worry for him. Although Big Yellow was no match for the three early Divine Immortal experts, he would be in a situation similar to Ah Da and Ah Er: It would be impossible to kill Big Yellow in a short period of time.

Moreover, Big Yellow was a divine beast with numerous means. He wasn't an easy prey anyone could hunt down. If the three really got entangled with him, a day and a night wouldn't be enough for them to get close to killing him.

The present situation was apparent: Ah Da and Ah Er were cooperating flawlessly with each other to fight against Lascivious Young Master while Big Yellow was dealing with the other three experts. As for Jiang Chen, he only had to concentrate on one opponent. Anyhow, the key was Jiang Chen. Once he eliminated the two demonic beasts and successfully advanced to the early Heaven Immortal realm, there wouldn't be problems anymore.

“Wakaka, do the three of you think that you can kill Master Dog? How stupid! I suppose you three haven't tasted enough of my fart yet.”

Big Yellow brayed with laughter and said mockingly.

“Flay this dog!”

The three of them were furious and gritted their teeth. There was no way that they could stay calm when they thought of the suffering given by this dog's fart. It was a total disgrace for them to throw up continuously in front of all those people below. In order to regain their face, they needed to flay this dog alive.

Hong Long...

A fierce battle was started as the three Divine Immortal experts launched their attacks on Big Yellow simultaneously. Big Yellow definitely wasn't an easy opponent to deal with. A pair of sparkling wings sprouted behind his back. Despite his burly body, he was extremely flexible. Flickers of dazzling illusions were seen during the battle, giving his opponents a hard time to determine his location.

In the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying observed the entire scene with their mouth hanging open. They had never thought that those comrades brought by Jiang Chen was so abnormally powerful. Putting Big Yellow aside, they found it hard to believe that Ah Da and Ah Er could fight against Lascivious Young Master.

At the present moment, they were focusing their attention on Jiang Chen, because he, too, was incredibly powerful. Anyone should know the huge difference between a true Divine Immortal expert and a mere half-step Heaven Immortal.

“Sister Qingcheng, do you think Young Master Jiang can deal with that Divine Immortal expert?”

Huang Ying sounded somewhat concerned. She had just escaped from the grip of suffering and Jiang Chen was the only person she could rely on, the only reason she was still able to live in the Evil Abyss.

“I have great confidence in Big Brother Jiang. He is a genius. He is the most terrifying genius that I have ever seen. Back when he was merely an early Earth Immortal expert, he was already able to kill an early Heaven Immortal expert. Now, even though he's only a half-step Heaven Immortal expert, we can never regard him as a mere Heaven Immortal expert,” replied Yan Qingcheng.

Despite her heart being extremely worried for Jiang Chen, she still had a very high confidence on him, the confidence that Jiang Chen had planted in her heart back in Yan City. Due to Jiang

Chen's presence back then, the crisis in Yan City was completely reversed.

“He could already kill a Heaven Immortal expert when he was only an early Earth Immortal expert? I have never seen such a cultivator before. In that case, I would like to see if he's that incredible.”

Ever since Huang Ying met Jiang Chen, the astonishment on her face had never faded. Although she was still sceptical about Yan Qingcheng's remark, she could sense a glimmer of hope from Jiang Chen.

Two battle platforms of the city were melted by the heat. The early Divine Immortal great demon was standing in front of Jiang Chen, looking and smirking at him disdainfully.

“Kid, I can see that you have a very strong blood and Qi, which will be a great nourishment for me. If I were you, I would surrender to avoid any further physical sufferings. It's really pointless for me to fight a puny little half-step Heaven Immortal,” said the great demon.

“You will find it meaningful in a while.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. Then, a wild force of a divine beast exploded from his body. Immediately, changes started to appear on his body until he turned into a half-dragon and half-human. To him, using this form in combat was more satisfying than transforming into a full-dragon.

“En? What a powerful transformation technique! It can actually boost his combat strength by so much! Humph! But this won't give you the privilege to show your arrogance in front of me. Nothing will change regardless of how much your combat strength has increased. Your end will only be death.”

The great demon was astounded upon observing Jiang Chen's transformation. It was his first time seeing such a powerful

transformation technique, but that didn't give him the reason to pay any extra attention to Jiang Chen. In his point of view, a puny little half-step Heaven Immortal wouldn't get very strong even though his combat strength had been boosted significantly, and death would only be the end result.

“True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen didn't bother with the great demon's nonsense and struck out with the True Dragon Palm. A huge dragon claw pounced on the demon like a cattail leaf fan. The force of this palm strike was produced by the circulation of 450 000 dragon marks that was capable of moving mountains.

Chapter 1214 – The Practical Usage of the Great Divination Art

The great demon couldn't help but reveal a surprised face after noticing Jiang Chen's fierce attack. It was totally beyond his imagination. There was a saying: whenever you launched your attack in battle, your opponent would know the degree of your power. He had never thought that such an incredible force could erupt from a mere half-step Heaven Immortal expert.

However, that was still not enough for him to take Jiang Chen seriously. It was all because of Jiang Chen's cultivation base. There was no way that he would attach so much importance to a half-step Heaven Immortal expert.

Hong Long...

A pair of demonic and black sharp claws were struck out, colliding heavily with Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm. Violent energy was spread from the impact, causing the void to tremble.

Deng! Deng! Deng!

Under such intense impact, Jiang Chen was forced three steps back before regaining his balance. He could feel the numbness from his body due to the shockwave, but with the help of the wood spiritual Qi, he had recovered almost instantly. The result had been within his calculation as his opponent was, after all, a powerful Divine Immortal expert that he couldn't gain an upper hand from.

“What?”

The great demon was shocked by what had happened. It was just like when Lascivious Young Master collided against Big Yellow. He found it hard to accept that his violent attack could only send a half-step Heaven Immortal opponent a few steps back. There was neither injury nor damage inflicted.

Was this a joke?

Finally, Huang Ying witnessed Jiang Chen's power. This was her first time seeing Jiang Chen's attack ever since she met him. All along, the impression she had for Jiang Chen was all formed from Yan Qingcheng's words. It was no doubt eye-opening to be able to see it for herself today.

Keng!

Jiang Chen didn't want to waste any more time. He drew out the Heavenly Saint Sword. The blood-red dragon sword glinted in the night sky. The Qi of this divine weapon had fully integrated with Jiang Chen's Qi. The body of the sword was a complete living divine dragon.

At the same time, Jiang Chen's eyes glittered with seven different colours as he circulated the Great Divination Art. Due to his Great Divination Art having reached the Heavenly Vision realm, he could already use this art in battle. If he didn't rely on this technique to fight an early Divine Immortal opponent, he wouldn't stand a chance even if he exhausted all of his skills.

"Kid, I'm eager to see how powerful your puny little half-step Heaven Immortal power can reach."

The great demon was infuriated. He regarded the fact that Jiang Chen could block his attack as an accident. Subsequently, he casted a black ocean of stormy energy at Jiang Chen, but before he could fully launch it out, half of it was already blocked by Jiang Chen.

The Heavenly Saint Sword turned into a ray of light and slashed at the centre of the black energy, cutting away the source of its power.

"What?"

The great demon was astounded even more this time. He looked at Jiang Chen with surprised eyes. He was clueless what kind of means his opponent had used. It could anticipate his attack and

stop it before he could even launch it out.

“This is an accident, this must be an accident.”

The great demon could only comfort himself in such a way. When he couldn't find an explanation for the situation, he could only admit that it was Jiang Chen's luck.

However, in the following exchanges, Jiang Chen repeatedly cut off his attack, giving him no chance to fully launch his attack and forcing the other half of the attack back to him. Such a situation would certainly affect one's power the most. When the great demon's power was reduced dramatically, Jiang Chen's chances of victory began to rise.

.....

The great demon was mad. Although he hadn't lost the upper hand yet, such a battle was too stifling. It gave him the impulse to go frenzy, which was what Jiang Chen wanted him to do. Jiang Chen wanted to wait until his opponent went into a frenzied state before launching a full-fledged attack. By that time, it would be the end of his opponent.

In the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Huang Ying was dumbfounded. Jiang Chen's power had conflicted all of her expectations. If she wasn't seeing a half-step Heaven Immortal expert making an early Divine Immortal expert go mad with her own eyes, she wouldn't have believed it because there wasn't such a ridiculous thing in the world.

“Sister Ying, Big Brother Jiang still has lots of other means. You'll see. This great demon is going to be finished soon. He's going to die in Big Brother Jiang's hands.”

Yan Qingcheng said in an incomparably confident tone. Apart from her infatuation for Jiang Chen, she also had admiration and idolization for him.

“I am beginning to believe it.”

Huang Ying sighed. After witnessing Jiang Chen's abilities, she had found the reason to believe Yan Qingcheng's words.

Lascivious Young Master was still entangled with Ah Da and Ah Er. Although he was able to force the two barbaric bulls back, but due to the two working too well with one another, there was no way for him to change the outcome of the battle unless he could get rid of either one of them. If the battle continued this way, Ah Da and Ah Er would surely trouble him for another hour or two.

Even though Lascivious Young Master knew that there was always a weak spot in every coordination, he found it incredibly difficult to find that spot.

On the other side, Big Yellow had already displayed all of his skills, keeping the three experts occupied, so that they had no chance to focus on Jiang Chen. Big Yellow wasn't an idiot and he had also reached a perfect tacit understanding with Jiang Chen. Therefore, he didn't need to be told what the next move was.

Furthermore, he had already seen the situation clearly. The key to whether they could overthrow the young master of Lascivious City was Jiang Chen. As such, buying Jiang Chen time and creating chances for him was the most important thing to do.

The infuriated great demon that Jiang Chen confronted had already turned into its true form with a ghastly face that no one had ever seen before. Six claws had popped out from his limbs, but unfortunately, this form wouldn't help him turn the situation around.

Since its mind had already been disorientated, its skills had lost its purpose and function. Jiang Chen, on the other hand, was immersed in the profundity of the Great Divination Art. The many rounds of battle he fought, the braver and the more fluid his movements became. After ten minutes of continuous battle, the great demon had lost its control as it couldn't bear it anymore.

"The opportunity has come. Fusion of Dragon and Sword. Nine

Phantom Wolves!”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glittered. It could only be said that he had too much battle experience and could always launch the most crucial attack at the most critical time. Just like what happened now. Jiang Chen waited until the great demon lost all of its focus and composure and then launched the most deadly attack. At this point in time, his Nine Phantom Wolves would work best.

For a moment, Jiang Chen and the Heavenly Saint Sword combined into one, but in the great demon’s eyes, there were nine swords or dragons, confusing it even more. It became impossible for it to find out who the real Jiang Chen was.

Chapter 1215 – The Dramatic Boost

The strike that the great demon launched was fatal, but due to his confused mind and diverted attention, he could only disperse its energy to attack the nine Jiang Chen.

This was the common failing of every opponent who died under Jiang Chen's Nine Phantom Wolves. Once the opponent decided to divide the power of its attack, the opponent would end up pretty miserably. This great demon was not an exception.

Hong Long...

Immense energy rushed forward and destroyed eight of Jiang Chen's phantoms, leaving only the true Jiang Chen.

The integration of the dragon and sword was Jiang Chen's full-fledged attack. It was indestructible and could perish everything that was on its way.

Pu Chi!

The dragon sword penetrated through the great demon's chest. The terrifying sword Qi messed up everything inside his body and crushed his heart.

Barf...

This was a fatal blow. The great demon couldn't bear it and spurted out a mouthful of blood. He could feel the constant loss of vital force in his body. The only thing that glinted in his eyes was despair. That was right. No one wouldn't be despaired in front of death and the great demon was not an exception. The stronger the expert, the lesser the expert wanted death. In their point of view, death was still too far away, but when death found them, they would be in total despair and helpless.

"No, no..."

The great demon couldn't believe what was happening. He

couldn't believe that he would actually die in the hands of a half-step Heaven Immortal expert. This was something he had never dreamt of. Death had become his inevitable outcome.

Jiang Chen smiled coldly as blazing flames were spewed out from the dragon sword, burning the body of the great demon from inside.

In an instant, the great demon lost his vital force and died. His body was incinerated in a matter of blinks, leaving only the shining demonic soul on Jiang Chen's hand.

“What?”

Many exclaimed when they saw the scene, including Lascivious Young Master and the other three Divine Immortal experts. They all looked at Jiang Chen simultaneously with astonishment that was beyond anyone's imagination.

Of all the people who were watching the fight, the one they looked down upon the most was Jiang Chen. To put it bluntly, they had never put Jiang Chen in their eyes. In fact, how could they possibly pay their precious attention to a puny little half-step Heaven Immortal?

This puny little half-step Heaven Immortal, however, had given them a huge psychological blow. He had killed one of their mighty early Divine Immortal expert. It wasn't because of the incompetence of the great demon, but the abnormal power of Jiang Chen. The power that exceeded logic and everyone's scope of acceptance.

“My God!”

Inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Huang Ying was gaping at the scene. Her eyes were radiating brilliance as they fell upon Jiang Chen. Even though she had high hopes for him, she didn't have the courage to imagine that Jiang Chen could actually kill an early Divine Immortal great demon.

“This is Big Brother Jiang’s true power. Do you see it now, Sister Ying?” Yan Qingcheng said, her face brimming with pride. This was the man she had fallen in love with, a man that could always bring miracles.

“Peerless and monstrous. I have never seen such a genius before.”

Huang Ying sighed. At this moment, she had already been fully convinced by Jiang Chen’s power. A man with such attractiveness was truly fascinating.

“Courting death!”

Lascivious Young Master cleared all his disdainful thoughts against Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen’s performance was too astounding and that had given him the urge to kill Jiang Chen first.

He moved towards Jiang Chen at an incredible speed, but Ah Da and Ah Er weren’t slow either and the degree of their cooperation was amazing. Both of them blocked the young master’s path.

This was because Jiang Chen had given them the order to keep the young master entangled, so that Jiang Chen had more time to advance his cultivation.

“You trash! The three of you can’t even take care of one dog? What are you all waiting for? Go and kill that brat first!”

When Lascivious Young Master found out that he couldn’t get away from the two bulls, he clamoured at the other three Divine Immortal experts.

The three of them moved without another word from the young master. Two of the three lunged at Jiang Chen immediately, leaving one to face Big Yellow. They now deeply regretted their previous decision. If two of them handled Jiang Chen earlier, Jiang Chen would have been no match for them.

Unfortunately, they failed to see that Jiang Chen was a potential threat to them. They had chosen to take care of Big Yellow first

instead of Jiang Chen.

“Kaka! You all think Master Dog is an insignificant dude?”

Sparkling wings sprouted from his back. Subsequently, he launched his head forward like a canon at the three experts, giving them no chance to deal with Jiang Chen.

On the other side, Jiang Chen was standing like a light cloud in the sky with a composed face. Immediately, he swallowed the demon soul, and under the circulation of his dragon transformation skill, the demon soul was very quickly turned into pure energy and absorbed into his body.

For him, the demon soul of an early Divine Immortal was a great boost to his cultivation. New dragon marks started forming continuously the moment it entered his body.

One thousand, two thousand... in a few minutes, 35000 dragon marks had been formed in his Qi Sea, pushing the number of dragon marks to 485 000.

This was the advantage of refining a Divine Immortal demon soul. Now, he was only 15000 away from 500 000 dragon marks. As long as he took down another demonic beast and refined its demon soul, he would have no problem reaching the early Heaven Immortal realm. At that time, he could take down that lascivious dude.

Hong Long...

Violent energy surged out from his body. The Heavenly Saint Sword had become stronger. Without saying another word, he launched a strike at the other great demon. The Heavenly Saint Sword howled as it cut through the air, causing a thunder strike.

Big Yellow changed his attention to the other two opponents, because he could already imagine that the great demon would end up just like his comrade.

Although Jiang Chen wasn't an early Heaven Immortal expert

yet, he was not far away from that. Plus, with the help of the Great Divination Art, it made it easier for him to deal with an early Divine Immortal great demon.

Seeing Jiang Chen lunging at him, the demon changed his facial expression dramatically. It was impossible to deny that he now had fear for Jiang Chen after seeing how his comrade died under Jiang Chen's hands, but since Jiang Chen's attack had already locked onto his position, the only way to face it was to block it.

Chapter 1216 – Early Heaven Immortal realm

Roar!

Dragon roars rumbled in the sky, later turning into visible sound waves that filled the whole sky above the city and caused plenty of people to look pale. Putting everything aside, this momentum was enough to draw fear inside of Jiang Chen's opponent.

The great demon gave out a roar too. A shiny combat weapon materialized in his hand. He then used it to meet Jiang Chen's dragon sword.

Hong Long...

The shockwave was overwhelming. Countless of waves were sent out like tides. Every wave was like an invisible sharp weapon that could cut anyone who was within range to pieces.

Apparently, this impact wasn't in the great demon's favour. One should know that anyone who was placed on the battlefield was a fighter, and what a fighter needed the most was fighting spirit. If the fighter's fighting spirit dropped, it would give rise to the feeling of defeat in the fighter's heart, and in the end, that feeling would devour the entire person.

The great demon might be very strong, but because of fear, he subconsciously thought that he was no match for Jiang Chen. Therefore, his objective now wasn't to kill Jiang Chen but to avoid being killed.

Under such psychological influence, defeat was inevitable. Also, due to the influence of Jiang Chen's Great Divination Art, it prevented the demon from using all of his combat strength. Moreover, after the 35 000 dragon marks increase in Jiang Chen's body, his combat strength had been boosted. As such, it was virtually imaginable what the outcome of the battle would be.

After the collision, the great demon was sent flying away from the scene and almost lost his grip of his Immortal Weapon along the way. Shock was all over his face as he lifted his head and looked at Jiang Chen in disbelief.

“Dammit! How can a mere half-step Heaven Immortal be this powerful? This is damn!”

The great demon had the urge to spurt out blood. Before becoming a Divine Immortal expert, it was obvious that he was once a Heaven Immortal expert. So he knew very well the difference between a half-step Heaven Immortal and a Divine Immortal. Today, the situation had been completely reversed. He felt that his world was crumbling while standing in front of Jiang Chen, he suddenly felt that all his years of cultivation had been a waste.

When he darted a glance at the majestic big yellow dog, he couldn't help but feel himself much worse than that.

“Die now!”

Jiang Chen didn't want to waste any more time, using the integration of dragon and sword, and the Nine Phantom Wolves, he launched another strike the moment the great demon retreated. The great demon was instantly surrounded by Jiang Chen's images. Although this was his second time using the skill, it still worked very well.

Pu Chi!

In the end, the great demon had become Jiang Chen's stepping stone. He couldn't escape the terrifying means of Jiang Chen. The razor-sharp Heavenly Saint Sword penetrated the great demon's glabella. Blood spewed out, and anguish was fully displayed in his eyes.

“No, no...”

The aura of death shrouded the great demon. He couldn't believe

that he would die just like this, but this was the undeniable truth. This was going to be the last moment of his life.

Hong...

Destructive force rushed out from the Heavenly Saint Sword, crushing the head of the great demon. A golden demon soul landed on Jiang Chen's hands. This was the demon soul of an early Divine Immortal and it would be another great boost to his cultivation base.

Without hesitation, he swallowed the demon soul immediately.

Roar...

Dragon roars sounded from Jiang Chen's Qi Sea. New dragon marks began to form one by one. Once he advanced to the early Heaven Immortal realm, he would become capable of battling against Lascivious Young Master.

At this moment, half of Jiang Chen's plan had basically been realised. What followed next would be in Jiang Chen's complete control.

It only took a brief moment for him to fully condense 15 000 dragon marks. In the aspect of advancement, the further he advanced, the harder it was for him to condense dragon marks and the more energy needed. That explained why the first demon soul was able to help him condense 35 000 dragon marks whereas the second demon soul only helped him form 15 000 dragon marks.

Hu... Hu...

After withdrawing his Flaming Wings, he stepped into the sky by controlling the spatial airflow. This was the symbol of a true Heaven Immortal expert. Although he had already possessed the strength to kill a Divine Immortal opponent before advancing, his cultivation wasn't strong enough and he hadn't mastered the ability to hover in the air on his own yet.

So this is the Heaven Immortal realm? It feels good, but this

advancement has created an impact on my foundation. Fortunately, I will be able to recover it quickly, but I must not use such method of advancement anymore within this period of time.

Jiang Chen muttered in his heart. If it wasn't for getting rid of Lascivious Young Master, perhaps he wouldn't have chosen such a way of advancement. In the path of cultivation, the most important thing was the foundation. Once the foundation was affected, it would be bad for the cultivator.

It was necessary to improve one's cultivation as this vicious world was full of killings and evils. The only way to survive here was to make oneself stronger.

As for Jiang Chen, he not only wanted to survive in this place, but also to establish his name. Currently, he had a very huge interest in the Evil Lord, but he knew in his heart that his present strength was still far away from touching his opponent's level – mighty Immortal King realm.

“Dammit! This bastard has actually made an advancement.”

“Is he still human? He was already able to kill an early Divine Immortal expert when he was merely a half-step Heaven Immortal. Now that he has advanced to the early Heaven Immortal realm, we'll be no match for him for sure. Young master is still entangled with those two great demons and if that kid comes after us, it is imaginable what our fates will be.”

The two early Divine Immortal experts changed their facial expressions completely. The battle had started not long ago, but two Divine Immortal experts had already died under Jiang Chen's hands. To them, it was definitely an incomprehensible blow.

Swoosh!

Having the feeling of fear was useless. Jiang Chen darted a blade-like glance to them and in the next moment, he emerged beside Big Yellow like a spectre.

Both of the experts shuddered. They could already feel the killing intent from Jiang Chen's body. As the aura of killing intent encompassed their bodies, it even shook their minds.

“Kaka! Master Dog will now give the two of you a chance, commit suicide now to avoid any physical suffering.”

Big Yellow laughed pleasantly and returned the words they had said earlier back to them.

Chapter 1217 – The Aggrieved Lascivious Young Master

The dragon Jiang Chen was standing next to Big Yellow, holding the terrifying Heavenly Saint Sword and looking at the two Divine Immortal experts disdainfully. This kind of feeling was just too good.

The faces of the two early Divine Immortal experts darkened unpleasantly. As ferocious beings, they had never once feared anything, but the fact that this youth was able to kill two early Divine Immortal great demons was terrifying. The shock that they felt was irresistible as it came from their innermost soul.

“I will now give you all a chance to live, which is by submitting yourself to me,” said Jiang Chen.

After arriving in the Evil Abyss, Jiang Chen needed to conquer Lascivious City first to establish his own forces. So naturally, he would need to get as much help as he could. If these two early Divine Immortal experts were willing to yield to Jiang Chen’s command, both of them would become his reliable and capable generals.

“Humph! How dare the two of you think about yielding to someone? Don’t you two want to live anymore?”

Lascivious Young Master clamoured furiously when he heard Jiang Chen’s words while busily dealing with Ah Da and Ah Er. The scene was stifling. Initially, he thought that he could end the battle quickly. He didn’t expect that the opponent whom he looked down upon the most would be able to kill two of his men and make an advancement during the battle.

“Your Lascivious Young Master can’t even help himself now. I’m a person who doesn’t like to wait, so I won’t give you two any time to consider. If the two of you yield to me now, you two will live.

Otherwise, I will kill both of you first before finishing your young master.”

Jiang Chen raised the dragon sword that glittered with blood-red light and pointed at the two men.

The two of them exchanged a glance, then nodded at the same time.

“Alright, we will yield to your command.”

Both of them said simultaneously. They weren’t fools. They knew that there was no absolute ruler in Evil Abyss and the most important thing here was to stay alive. They could already predict the outcome of the situation. If they didn’t surrender now, they would die immediately.

Furthermore, even though Lascivious Young Master was strong, he was now firmly entangled with the two barbaric bulls. Furthermore, there was this terrifying dragonman and that divine dog, there would be no good outcome for their young master.

In order to live, yielding was the only and final way.

“Very well. Consider the two of you very smart in your choice. I will now kill Lascivious Young Master to establish my own dignity.”

Jiang Chen spun, gripped his Heavenly Saint Sword and lunged at the direction of Lascivious Young Master. As to whether these two Divine Immortal experts were true to their words, it didn’t concern Jiang Chen, getting followers who were loyal and truthful in Evil Abyss was just wishful thinking.

His speed was extremely fast. He joined Ah Da and Ah Er in an instant, and together, they besieged Lascivious Young Master.

“Brat, I have to admit that you are truly astonishing, but do you think you can kill me by just the three of you?”

The young master said maliciously. He now had the urge to shred

Jiang Chen to pieces for ruining his effort and territory.

However, he was unafraid. He had a very high confidence in his combat strength. Even if he couldn't win the battle, he could still run away, but he was reluctant to do so because that would make him a laughing stock in Evil Abyss.

"I will know once I try, anyhow, I didn't have the intention of letting you go today."

Jiang Chen's killing intent soared to the sky. His Qi had totally locked on the young master. His body was shrouded by the aura of divination as he circulated the Great Divination Art rapidly. Then, he swung the Heavenly Saint Sword at Lascivious Young Master while Ah Da and Ah Er lunged frenziedly.

Lascivious Young Master also attacked madly, striking out a tremendous amount of blood-red light. Every ray of light was like a sharp bloody blade that cut through the void, but what happened next made him extremely aggrieved. He was shocked to find out that his attack was stopped by Jiang Chen half-way before the attack was fully struck out, which greatly reduced its attacking power.

Roar...

Ah Da and Ah Er got excited when they saw this scene. Although they had already been working together flawlessly, they had still been suppressed by the young master in their fight earlier. But with Jiang Chen's help, they suddenly felt a surge of exultation as they began to suppress the young master.

This situation was just as Jiang Chen expected, he was liking the Great Divination Art more and more. Evidently, the young master had already lost his edge in the fight and the next thing that awaited him would be death. So what Jiang Chen needed to do now was to prevent the young master from fleeing.

Lascivious Young Master was after all a mid Divine Immortal

expert. He was still capable of fleeing away if he lost.

“Big Yellow, quickly deploy a grand formation now to seal this entire void. Don’t give this lascivious dude any chance of escaping.”

Jiang Chen spoke to Big Yellow via divine sense. At the same time, he casted the Five Elemental Spheres. This was his first time displaying his domain skill ever since he arrived in the Immortal World. Due to the influence of the law of this world, he wasn’t able to fully display his domain skill, but he could still use the essence of the Five Elemental Spheres to build a grand formation.

Big Yellow and Jiang Chen had a very good understanding of each other. While Jiang Chen was casting the Five Elemental Spheres, Big Yellow flew skywards and began striking out rays of abstruse formation. These formations and seals were a perfect match to the Five Elemental Spheres.

To someone who had mastered the Formation Holy Book, it was incredibly easy to deploy a trapping formation.

As a matter of fact, this was the critical moment. If Lascivious Young Master chose to flee now, he might still have the chance and Jiang Chen wouldn’t be able to stop him, but once Big Yellow completed the formation, the young master would have nowhere to run.

Unfortunately, the young master was still immersed in his infuriation while battling against Jiang Chen and the two barbaric bulls. He had totally ignored Big Yellow’s formation. He had a very high confidence of himself. He believed that even if he couldn’t win the battle, he would still be able to run away at the last moment. He would never run away now or else, it would be shameful and humiliating.

The real grievance however had just started. Jiang Chen was getting more and more skilful in the use of the Great Divination Art. In the following exchanges, the young master had completely

lost his every attempt to strike. In fact, It was true that Jiang Chen wasn't a match for the young master, but he could rely on the Great Divination Art to obstruct the young master's attack, and leave the rest to Ah Da and Ah Er.

Ah Da and Ah Er were the symbol of ferocity and fierceness. Now that they had completely suppressed the young master, their excitement was soaring up.

Chapter 1218 – There's No Way to Run

It had turned into a one-sided match within a short period of time. If this wasn't happening in real time, it would only be regarded as a legend that no one would ever believe, it was pathetic to watch a mid Divine Immortal expert being suppressed in such a way.

In the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, the two girls were stupefied, especially Huang Ying. From the beginning when Jiang Chen wanted to attack Lascivious City, she was full of fear and wanted to stop him very much. But now, all of her worries had been washed away. What seemed impossible to her was happening right before her very eyes.

“This is truly a miracle.”

Huang Ying sighed in amazement. She could already tell that Lascivious Young Master was now in the losing side. If he didn't flee now, it was only a matter of time before he ended up dead in Jiang Chen's hands. She was now fully convinced of Jiang Chen's power. She had watched Jiang Chen's battle since the beginning – from the time he killed the two great demons until now. Every scene in the battle astonished her.

Like what Yan Qingcheng had said, this man was a creator of miracles. One could never judge him based on common sense. Anyone who dared to look down upon him would really end up miserable.

Roar...

A dragon's roar rumbled across the sky. Jiang Chen shape shifted into a true dragon and integrated with the dragon sword. His current combat strength was at its peak. In addition to his attack strength, the most frightening was his Qi. Any enemy would falter before such a surging momentum.

Hong Long...

Jiang Chen opened his huge dragon mouth and spewed out a fiery light. Each ray of fiery light merged itself with the sword intent of the Heavenly Saint Sword. Every stream of light was like a fiery sword rushing across the sky, lighting up the darkness in the sky and enshrouded Lascivious Young Master in an instant. This was the result of the combination of the Fire Dragon Seal and Heavenly Saint Sword.

On the other side, Ah Da and Ah Er exuded their Qi as well. Even they had to admit that fighting alongside Jiang Chen was exhilarating. The two barbaric bulls circulated their power to the maximum degree.

Three powerful attacks were sent out like waves that could move mountains and annihilate a portion of the starry sky.

Lascivious Young Master's facial expression changed upon seeing this scene. He had now lost all his composure because he could already feel the unprecedented Qi of danger.

"F*ck! This bastard is truly abnormal. He's able to muster so much strength despite him having just advanced to the Heaven Immortal realm. Adding the two barbaric bulls, I will be no match against them. I'd better flee now and have my revenge someday. By that time, I will ask help from my best friends to destroy him once and for all," he cursed in his heart.

Although he was reluctant to do so, he wasn't a fool. He had already predicted the outcome of the battle, knowing that it wouldn't be in his favour if he continued fighting. So, he might as well flee now and settle the score some other day.

Hong Long...

Jiang Cheng and Ah Da and Ah Er's attacks landed on Lascivious Young Master at the same time, causing the young master's body to suffer a severe shock even though he had already casted out all

of his means to block the attacks. As he had been wounded during the previous battles, his injury worsened and blood trickled out of his mouth while receiving the heavy bombardment from his enemies.

“Brat! I will remember this score today. Don’t think it’s easy to conquer my territory. It will be your death the moment I return!”

Lascivious Young Master shouted out a threatening remark and flew away in a ray of light.

A trace of a smirk was seen on the corner of Jiang Chen’s mouth. He had already anticipated that the young master would escape, unfortunately, it was already too late for that. Big Yellow had already completed the grand formation and had fully integrated with Jiang Chen’s Five Elemental Spheres. As such, it had become impossible for the young master to flee from the scene.

In Jiang Chen’s opinion, the grand formation was good enough as long as it could temporarily trap Lascivious Young Master inside the formation.

“Lascivious Young Master, it’s too late to go now. So stay!”

Jiang Chen lunged at him together with Ah Da and Ah Er with a murderous strike.

Currently, the young master detected that something wasn’t right. He could feel the existence of a grand formation – an invisible barrier trapping him within. He also saw the disgusting big yellow dog baring his teeth at him.

“Break it open!”

Infuriated, the young master channelled all of his energy into his Immortal Weapon and slashed at the barrier violently.

Pu Chi!

As he was a mighty mid Divine Immortal expert, he was able to rip open the grand formation with a full-force slash. However, this

gave Jiang Chen and the other two bulls enough time to launch their attack on him. Furthermore, this was the moment when the young master was at his most vulnerable state.

Hong Long...

The attacks landed from above like a violent storm. Even though the young master had successfully broke open the grand formation, he was defenceless against the incoming attacks.

Subsequently, the young master was sucked into the violent storm created out of boundless destructive energy.

“Argh...”

Wails were heard from the inside. It was the voice of the young master. Even a mid Divine Immortal expert couldn't escape the fate of being slaughtered.

Very quickly, the stormy energy faded and the young master started to materialize on the scene. His current appearance was beyond description. Many portions of the red robe that he was wearing were torn. Blood was gushing out from the wounds on his body and his Qi was withering like a dried plant. He had lost all the firmness he had had.

Hiss!

Numerous people sucked in a breath of cold air when they saw the young master's current condition, especially those two early Divine Immortal experts who had already yielded to Jiang Chen. They could imagine what kind of consequences they would've faced if they refused to comply earlier.

“Ruthless! This young man is absolutely abnormal and monstrous. I can't believe that the mid Divine Immortal young master can be beaten up so badly.”

“Ai! The ruler of the city is going to change again. Lascivious Young Master will surely die today, but he also deserved this. It's a good thing that he's going to be eliminated soon.”

“There’s no way he can live after being injured in such a way.”

.....

Noises of discussions were everywhere. Although Lascivious Young Master was yet to be killed, his current situation wasn’t far away from death. The people could already imagine the outcome of this young master. Jiang Chen would surely never let him go, this was the Evil Abyss where mercy and kindness could never be found, only evils and murders. Therefore, the defeated opponent would only have one outcome – death.

Chapter 1219 – Fragrant Sky City

Plenty of them however didn't have much sentiments for Lascivious Young Master's death. To them, the young master's death was just akin to replacing him with another conqueror, which had no influence to their lives at all.

In Evil Abyss, sentiment was regarded as an extravagant emotion.

Jiang Chen approached the young master and turned back to his human form, holding the Heavenly Saint Sword. The present Lascivious Young Master was no longer a threat to him. Killing him was as simple as crushing an ant.

Lascivious Young Master lifted his head and looked at Jiang Chen with hatred and fear.

"It's ironic that I would fall in the hands of a Heaven Immortal expert."

Lascivious Young Master forced a smile, but didn't beg for his life. He knew the norm of the Evil Abyss very well. There was no point in begging for his life because defeat was equal to death.

Pu Chi!

Jiang Chen sent his long sword forth without saying a word, penetrating through the young master's chest. A destructive force burst out from the Heavenly Saint Sword, destroying all the vital force inside Lascivious Young Master's body.

In this evil place, one didn't need to have a solid reason in order to kill.

As for Jiang Chen, even if he didn't met Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying, he would still go and eliminate this lascivious man. Now that he had come to the Evil Abyss, he had to accomplish something, and killing was only the beginning.

Hong.....

Flames spread across Lascivious Young Master, incinerating his entire body in a few blinks, leaving no remains behind.

Seeing the place where the young master was incinerated, the two early Divine Immortal expert hastily came to Jiang Chen's side and bowed to him.

"Congratulations Young Master on becoming the new conqueror of Lascivious City. The two of us will always be at Young Master's service."

The two of them spoke at the same time. Right now was the right time for them to show their loyalty to their new master.

"The name Lascivious City is too unpleasant to hear. Change it to Fragrant Sky City. I want the two of you to make a plaque for Sky Fragrant City and hang it outside the front gate."

Said Jiang Chen. He wasn't comfortable with the name 'Lascivious City' and now that he was the new master of this territory, it was his responsibility to modify the name to 'Sky Fragrant City'. Others might not have a clue about this, but Big Yellow understood it completely. Jiang Chen was a person who valued relationship. He had numerous relatives and friends in the Mortal World. Fragrant Sky City would remind him of the warmth and his father.

"Yes, City Lord. By the way, how may we address City Lord?" One of them asked.

"Jiang Chen."

Jiang Chen revealed his name. From now on, this name would be spread across the Evil Abyss and one day, this name would become a symbol and would make countless of people tremble in fear as soon as they heard it.

The two of them didn't ask any more questions. They recorded the name in their memory and went to complete the task ordered

by Jiang Chen. The name of the city was never their concern. What they were concerned about was whether they could continue to survive in the Evil Abyss.

After killing Lascivious Young Master, Jiang Chen let the two girls out of the pagoda. Then, they headed towards the prefecture. This was the first territory that he had conquered in the Evil Abyss, but it surely wouldn't be the last. He wanted to conquer all of the cities in this world and named them Fragrant Sky City.

In the Prefecture!

As Huang Ying stared at this bright smiling face in front of her, she found it hard to relate him to the ferocious and domineering killing god earlier. Thinking about the means that Jiang Chen had used in the battle prompted her heart to palpitate.

“Young Master Jiang is surely an unrivalled genius.”

Except this line of words, she felt that whatever she said would be superfluous. This youth was a man with great personality and charisma. He was the son of the Heavens and his future achievements would be limitless. It was only a matter of time before nothing could challenging him in the Evil Abyss anymore.

“You are welcome, Sister Ying. We'll be like a family from now on. There is danger everywhere in this place. So you and Qingcheng should stay here until we find a way to exit this world.”

Said Jiang Chen with a smile. Fragrant Sky City was the right place for these two girls to settle down.

“I wonder when will we be able to leave this place.”

Huang Ying shook her head and sighed. This place was nothing more than a purgatory. It wasn't a simple task to leave this world because the spatial passageway that connected this place to the outside world was being controlled by the Evil Lord, a mighty Immortal King expert. That was a level which they could never reach.

“Not to worry Sister Ying. Big Brother Jiang is here and he is surely going to get us out of here soon.”

Said Yan Qingcheng. She was very confident in Jiang Chen. To her, as long as Jiang Chen was present, there was nothing that they couldn't achieve.

Huang Ying nodded. Although she didn't have too much hope on leaving this nightmarish place, Jiang Chen's emergence had allowed her to see a glimmer of light. What Jiang Chen did today was just too impressive, it was totally beyond her imagination.

Shortly after, the two early Divine Immortal experts came to the main hall of the prefecture with the completed plaque of Fragrant Sky City. As Divine Immortal experts, it was a piece of cake for them to do this kind of stuff.

“City Lord, I'm Chen Hui and he is Li Si.”

Chen Hui spoke and introduced themselves.

“En, the two of you have done well. You two are going to get boundless of benefits if you continue to serve me well.” Said Jiang Chen.

“Of course, but City Lord has killed Lascivious Young Master and conquered Lasci-no, Fragrant Sky City. I'm afraid that this has created a big trouble.” Said Li Si.

“Oh? What kind of trouble?”

Asked Jiang Chen with great interest. Although he had heard lots of information from Huang Ying, those were merely general informations. Therefore, he was still unclear about the status of this piece of territory.

“City Lord, this is the outer area of Evil Abyss. There are a total of 36 cities in this area. Although all the cities are operating independently, there is a certain connection among them. Some City Lords have a very good connection with one another, which is equivalent to an alliance. And because of this, they were able to

maintain their existence in the outer area. Lascivious Young Master isn't an exception. He also has three good friends and their cities are not far away from this city. The Four of them got along very well with one another and were called brothers. Today, you have killed Lascivious Young Master. If those three City Lords know about this, I'm afraid they won't let this matter rest easily."

Said Chen Hui. He had a very good understanding about the division of powers in the outer area and the connections of his previous young master.

Chapter 1220 – Countermeasure

After hearing this, Jiang Chen couldn't help but frown. This was something that he had never thought before, but it was incomparably reasonable after thinking about it. The further away the territory, the more chaos there would be. Thus, it was only logical that there were plenty of competitions and alliances amongst the thirty plus cities.

“What is the cultivation base of those three men?” Asked Jiang Chen.

“Similar to Lascivious Young Master's, mid Divine Immortal realm.” Said Chen Hui.

“Young Master Jiang, I'm afraid that we won't be able to deal with them if the three of them come at the same time.” Said Huang Ying with concern.

“mid Divine Immortal realm?”

Jiang Chen's tone was flat. What Huang Ying said was right. If the three of them really appeared at the same time, the situation would be troublesome. Given his current strength, dealing with a mid Divine Immortal expert was difficult enough. Even with Ah Da and Ah Er's help, it would be impossible for him to fight three mid Divine Immortal opponents simultaneously.

Since this was said by Chen Hui and Li Si, Jiang Chen was almost certain that those three friends of Lascivious Young Master would certainly come and cause them trouble, and it wouldn't be long before they came.

However, as a matter of fact, they should've already sensed the shockwave of the battle, but none of them sent any reinforcement. Judging from this, the relationship between Lascivious Young Master and the other three City Lords weren't as good as it sounded. There was a saying that suited the situation in the Evil

Abyss very well, Heaven would destroy those who didn't look out for themselves. It was very common to have city raids, especially when a group of strangers had already planned to take over the city, but it was also common that if a group of people weren't sure of their enemies' overall strength, they would never make any advances.

That was why the three City Lords let Lascivious Young Master die than to emerge on the scene, but the news was going to be spread out soon. Once they learned about Jiang Chen's cultivation base, the three of them would certainly choose to strike Fragrant Sky City and eliminate the new ruler.

The top priority right now was to have a countermeasure. Jiang Chen couldn't afford to lose the territory he had just claimed, or else it would deal a huge blow to their morale. It would also affect his path of hegemony.

"What do you have in mind?" Big Yellow looked over at Jiang Chen.

"The Evil Clan."

A hint of ruthlessness was revealed in his eyes. The only thing he could think of right now was the Evil Clan.

"You want to go to the Evil Clan? That's too dangerous." Big Yellow frowned.

"What? Going to the Evil Clan?"

Chen Hui, Li Si and the two girls exclaimed together and stared at Jiang Chen with surprise, not knowing why Jiang Chen would think of going to the Evil Clan. In the Evil Abyss, the name of the Evil Clan could make anyone tremble in fear. Anyone who encountered the Evil Clan would flee for their lives, but now, Jiang Chen was planning to go and look for them. When one chose to step into the territory of the Evil Clan, it was no different than seeking death.

“Young Master Jiang, the devils in the Evil Clan is way too ferocious. Plus, I don’t think our current situation has anything to do with them.” Said Huang Ying.

“That’s right, City Lord. Our top priority right now is to think of ways to deal with the other three City Lords instead of offending the Evil Clan.”

Said Chen Hui, puzzled by Jiang Chen’s idea.

“Chen Hui, Li Si, I want the two of you to go home first. Leave this matter to me.”

Jiang Chen dismissed the two experts. Feeling the resoluteness in Jiang Chen’s tone, they didn’t dare disobey it and immediately left the main hall.

“Sister Ying, Qingcheng, you should already feel tired by now. Have a rest at your room first. I still have things to discuss with Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen shifted his gaze to Huang Ying and Yan Qingcheng.

The two girls were clueless about what Jiang Chen was going to do, but they knew they could never change his mind as he was a man with a firm mind. More importantly, given their current strength, they could never be of any help. To put it bluntly, they were the typical nuisance following Jiang Chen.

“Little Chen, do you really think of going to the Evil Clan?”

After the four of them left, Big Yellow asked.

“That’s right. I have just advanced to the early Heaven Immortal realm and even with the help of Ah Da and Ah Er, I won’t be able to fight the three mid Divine Immortal experts. The Evil Clan is neither demon nor devil, which gives me the advantage of suppressing them. As long as I’m able to edify a powerful mid Divine Immortal demonic devil, it will become very useful to me. After that, I won’t have any problems dealing with those three men anymore.”

Said Jiang Chen. This was the only countermeasure he could think of right now. There was a certain requirement while edifying devils. As he had already edified Ah Da and Ah Er, he could only edify one more mid Divine Immortal devil at best, but it would be extremely difficult for him to do so.

Jiang Chen had just advanced to the early Heaven Immortal realm and it was impossible for him to make another advancement temporarily. He couldn't force the advancement by swallowing and refining demon souls anymore as his foundation had already been affected. If he continued to use this kind of method, the repercussion would be unimaginable.

“I will go with you.”

Big Yellow shook his tail in excitement. He was always very interested in dangerous and adventurous task. Only Jiang Chen and him had the guts to go to the Evil Clan.

“No, you can't come with me. I don't know when the three experts will strike the city. You have to stay here to defend it. Do you still remember the Five Elemental Tisura Formation that we used against Nan Bei Chao? We will deploy it together, then you, Ah Da and Ah Er and the other four will join forces to defend the city. I believe that all of you will be able to hold the three experts for two days with the formation. Although two days is only a short window of time for me, I will do my best to make it on time.”

Said Jiang Chen. The Five Elemental Tisura Formation was the best defensive grand formation. Big Yellow and him were able to deploy a perfect formation together. This happened during the war in Nebula Sect, where they were able to use the formation to defend against Nan Bei Chao's attack.

In fact, apart from edifying a demonic devil, there was another method he could use – the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd, a powerful trump card left behind by Ouyang He.

In order to achieve its full power, the halberd had to be used with

the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes, or else it would only drain the wielder's energy. Now that he had advanced to the Heavenly Immortal realm, he could try cultivating the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes. At the most critical situation, this weapon could be his powerful and deadly trump card.

Chapter 1221 – Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool

Jiang Chen formulated a plan to deal with the crisis in a few words.

Knowing Jiang Chen very well, Big Yellow nodded. He knew that it would be very difficult to change Jiang Chen's mind once he made a decision. Moreover, given the current situation, what Jiang Chen decided to do was the only solution to the problem.

“Very well, but you have to be careful,” Big Yellow reminded. It wasn't a trivial matter to venture into the Evil Clan's territory. A single carelessness might cost Jiang Chen his life.

“Don't worry. I know what to do. With the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda's help, I will be safe and sound.”

Jiang Chen revealed a smile of confidence. As a matter of fact, he relied on the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda the most. No matter how confident he was, he wouldn't dare go into the territory of the Evil Clan without the pagoda. It had been proven in the past events that the pagoda could ensure his safety. The best example was when he used the pagoda to steal the Regenerative Lotus, and none of the late Golden Immortal experts detected his presence before he acted. Therefore, as long as he didn't have an extremely bad luck and didn't encounter the Immortal King experts of the Evil Clan, he basically wouldn't have a problem finishing this task.

He intended to only go to the border area of the Evil Clan where the chances of meeting an Immortal King expert was close to zero.

Currently, fourteen levels had already been condensed in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, but there were still lots of advancements to go before reaching the peak, ninety-nine levels. This huge gap needed to be filled up bit by bit. The higher its level, the more Jiang Chen could exert the power of the pagoda. There were still

plenty of unknown energies waiting to be explored inside the pagoda. As for the demonic devils in the Evil Clan, they could be used as nourishment for the pagoda's advancement.

Ah Da and Ah Er were silent. They had always obeyed what Jiang Chen said without expressing any of their opinions. Putting it bluntly, after they were edified, they had become Jiang Chen's slaves.

"Time is of the essence. Let's deploy the grand formation now. Due to our limited ability, we can only cover the area of the prefecture. If we try to cover the whole Fragrant Sky City, the power of the formation will be drastically reduced," said Jiang Chen, knowing that what he needed to do now was to ensure the safety of the prefecture and nothing else.

Next, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow began to set up the formation. This wasn't their first time working together and it also wasn't their first time deploying the Five Elemental Tisura Formation. It could be said that everything was within their fingertips. The grand formation would be fully deployed at dawn.

After deploying the formation, Jiang Chen left Fragrant Sky City stealthily and headed towards the direction of the Evil Clan. Letting Big Yellow defend the city didn't worry him much because the Five Elemental Tisura Formation would be able to hold the three mid Divine Immortal experts for at least two days, which meant that he had at least two days of time to complete his task. Judging from the inaction of the three city lords, they must be trying to gather more information about the situation and Jiang Chen. If that was the case, it would provide him even more time, which was a good thing to them.

"In order to reach the territory of the Evil Clan, I will have to cross half of the Evil Abyss. Despite my speed and the help of the Flaming Wings, I will need at least half a day to arrive there. It seems like the Evil Abyss isn't really that chaotic after all. It will be better if one can see a demonic devil everywhere one goes."

Jiang Chen couldn't help but shake his head. If what he said was heard by outsiders, he was afraid that his words would instantly make the listener furious. It will be better to have demonic devils everywhere? The demonic devils of the Evil Clan were extremely ferocious. If they really did exist everywhere, there was no way for the humans to survive.

If he didn't meet any demonic devil, he could never show the full power of the Edifying Light, but instead of doing nothing in the journey, he studied the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes.

In truth, this skill only had three styles, namely the first three strikes, the second three strikes and the last three strikes. Based on the record of the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes, they were named as Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool, Regretless Falling Dragon and Nine Dragons Extinguishing the World.

Of the three styles, each style was more terrifying than the other and there were three levels for every style. The most important thing in this powerful combat technique was that it had to be used along with the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd, so that a massive amount of energy could be casted out.

As he studied the skill carefully, he was attracted by the three styles. Every technique fascinated him and stirred up his blood. It also has some characteristics that were perfectly matched with the dragon transformation skill. To put it in another way, this skill was tailored to his needs.

Even the previous master of this skill, Ouyang He, wasn't comparable to Jiang Chen in the aspect of cultivation. Jiang Chen's cultivation technique had given him the unique advantage when it came to mastering this skill.

What Jiang Chen was exploring right now was the first style of the skill – Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool. The main element of this technique was its aggressiveness which required tremendous energy to support it. It was a combat technique cultivated by

Golden Immortal experts, but Jiang Chen was merely a Heaven Immortal expert. It was impossible for him to practice it, let alone comprehending the essence of the technique.

However, Jiang Chen was no ordinary expert. Aside from his extraordinary talent, his dragon transformation skill had given him a great advantage and was enough to support the cultivation of the Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool. However, the key here was to match it perfectly.

He turned into an illusory image, flew into the gap between the mountains and rivers and selected a very remote area where very few people passed by. Even if he encountered one or two humans, he could avoid them unnoticeably. The last thing he wanted right now was to have a clash with any of the expert of the middle region as that would be unfavourable to him. There were numerous experts in this region who were beyond his ability to fight. He would end up pretty badly if he had a direct confrontation with any of the Golden Immortal experts.

An hour later, Jiang Chen's blood and Qi had turned vibrant and wild energy was rolling inside of him. He struck out a palm. Hovering above his palm was a Blood Dragon that radiated the aura of hegemony. It came from neither Jiang Chen's own dragon marks nor the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. It had evolved from the Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool. Although this was only the first level, such speed of advancement would astound anyone. If Ouyang He was still alive and saw this, no one knew how astounded he would be. He might have the same astonished look as Tianji Zi.

Chapter 1222 – Spiritual Spring and Soul Essence

Hu... Hu...

The blood-red frenzied dragon in his palm was constantly enlarging, but the energy in his body was also fading rapidly. Noticing what was happening, he hastily withdrew his energy. He couldn't help but wipe off a trickle of cold sweat and sighed with shock.

“Motherf*cker! This explains why only a Golden Immortal expert could cultivate this combat technique properly. My current cultivation is still too weak. I have already expended such massive energy just to condense the image of the frenzied dragon. If this technique is used with the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd, I'm afraid that all of my energy will be instantly drained. Although I have already mastered the first style of the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes, I should never use it casually unless it is a critical moment to avoid using up all my energy,” said Jiang Chen.

Despite its massive consumption of energy, its power was terrifying. He estimated that if this technique was struck out with full force, he would have no problem killing a mid Divine Immortal expert. As for the ability of the Great Divination Art, it could only make him equally matched with a mid Divine Immortal opponent.

However, as far as the present situation was concerned, the Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool technique was only suitable for a one-versus-one battle with a mid Divine Immortal expert. Once Jiang Chen used this technique, he would fall into a vulnerable state. Although he could recover quickly, it would still be fatal to him if other experts were present.

Therefore, Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool could only be put as a last resort. Otherwise, he would put himself in real danger.

After regaining his focus from contemplating, he didn't continue exploring the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes further as acquiring the first style of the technique was already a sufficient achievement. Now that he had entered the middle region of the Evil Abyss where danger could be found everywhere, he must stay alert and careful at all times. It would be extremely depressing if he was killed before he even got to the territory of the Evil Clan.

There was a deep and serene valley far ahead. If one didn't pay enough attention to it, one wouldn't be able to notice it. He was able to tell it was a deserted valley. Because the valley was too deep, it was hard for anyone to sense the movement from the valley. At the present moment, there was a series of combat waves spreading out from the inside of the valley. Although it wasn't noticeable, it couldn't get past Jiang Chen's perceptive ability.

"There are experts fighting in the valley. Let's find out who they are," said Jiang Chen.

He then concealed his Qi and flew towards the valley like a spectre. Judging from the combat waves, the combatants were definitely experts even stronger than him. Out of curiosity, he wanted to find out what was going on, but he couldn't let anyone sense his presence.

He was pretty confident when it came to being stealthy. Even without the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, he would have no problem hiding from late Divine Immortal experts. Besides, these two combatants had already put all of their attention in the fight, because victory and defeat were often decided in an instant. If anyone of them lost their focus, that combatant was likely to lose the fight.

As he got closer to the scene, he saw two humans battling against one magnificent demon. It had a scary look and only have a vertical eye at the centre of its forehead that radiated a gloomy light from time to time. The Qi exuded from this demon was neither demonic nor devilish, but its body was enshrouded by devil

Qi. Its robust body was at least 30 meters tall. The black scales on its body sent chills down one's spine.

This is the demonic devil of the Evil Clan?

The only thing that could be linked to this demonic devil was the Evil Clan. The aura that exuded from this devil was not only the Qi of demonic devil, but also the qi of strong evil and slaughter. It could also be described as fiendish.

The cultivation base of this demonic devil is very strong. It has already reached the late Divine Immortal realm, but I have no idea why it appeared in human territory. The two humans also seem very ferocious. They were also at the late Divine Immortal realm, but why are the two of them besieging this demonic devil?

As the three combatants were late Divine Immortal experts, it was beyond Jiang Chen's ability to handle.

Hong Long...

The three great experts collided. Intense energy waves caused the pool below to evaporate. Under the joint attack of the two late Divine Immortal humans, the demonic devil was forced a hundred meters back.

However, Jiang Chen was slightly shocked by this scene. He was shocked not because of the demonic devil being shoved backwards. He was shocked by the fact that the demonic devil was still standing on his ground after the collision. One should know that the attack sent by the two late Divine Immortal experts was very powerful. Furthermore, he could tell from the devil's Qi that its blood and Qi weren't running smoothly. Perhaps, the devil had expended its energy and wasn't able to send out a powerful strike. This might be the reason why the devil was forced backwards by its opponents. He had to admit that the power of this devil's physique was beyond his imagination.

The demonic devils of the Evil Clan sure is powerful. If this devil

is in its peak, those two humans won't have a chance.

Demonic devils were usually stronger than any ordinary demonic beast because of their special physique. Jiang Chen started to admire that Evil Lord because of this. While having so many mighty demonic devils, he couldn't imagine how the Evil Lord was able to conquer half of the Evil Abyss. It only showed how powerful the Evil Lord is.

“Devil, how dare you nourish your soul essence in the lands of us, humans! And because of that, you have lost half of your energy. You are no match for us now. I suggest you to hand over the soul essence and spiritual spring to us now and perhaps that will save you your life,” one of them said.

“That's right, demon! As long as you give us the soul essence and spiritual spring, we will let you go and forget about today's matter, what do you say?” The other one spoke.

Judging from their tone, these two humans wanted to compromise. In the Evil Abyss, very few would think of compromising. Normally, there would only be defeat and victory, but these two humans weren't fools. They knew that they would have to pay a huge price even if they won the battle against this devil.

They only wanted to obtain the soul essence and spiritual spring instead of getting themselves seriously injured or killed in battle.

Roar...

The demonic devil roared. “Don't even think about it! That was the soul essence left by my father. I'm nourishing it here for the sake of his rebirth. You two have come to interrupt my business and wanted to seize my spiritual spring and soul essence. I won't let any of you have it your way even if that means making the ultimate sacrifice!”

Chapter 1223 – Making a Profit in a Troubled Situation

The demonic devil spoke in human language with a deep and loud tone. In the next few moments, the two humans had started an argument with the demonic devil, which gave Jiang Chen the general idea of how this incident started.

The demonic devil has chosen such a remote place to nourish its father's soul essence. I have heard of an ancient demonic magic that before the death of a demonic beast, it will use some sort of means to integrate all of its memory and spirit into its demon soul, turning it into a soul essence. The soul essence can be nourished by energy and has a chance of rebirth. But such means had only existed in legends. I never thought the demonic devils of the Evil Clan actually possess such means.

Jiang Chen thought. After all, he had seen a great deal of life. When he thought of the legendary secret art, he could almost conclude that demonic devil was using the same means. It was true that this place was secluded and very hard to be discovered by anyone, but despite of its careful consideration, its presence was still detected by humans, which then led to a battle.

To the two human experts, a soul essence was an invaluable item. Normally, humans weren't able to refine the demon soul directly, but it was a different case for the soul essence. Every essence that existed in a soul essence was the essence of the essence. The fact that the demonic devil's soul essence could attract the interest of these two late Divine Immortal human experts indicated that the soul essence had to be at least a half-step Golden Immortal realm.

At the thought of this, Jiang Chen's eyes brightened up because he knew how beneficial this soul essence was to him. If he could refine and absorb this soul essence, it wouldn't be a problem for him to advance to the mid Heaven Immortal realm. It could also

help recover his unstable foundation caused by forcefully refining demon souls.

Also, they talked about something like the spiritual spring. It seems like the reason the demonic devil intruded into the lands of humans was to get nourishment for the soul essence. The spiritual spring is a natural thing. If one tried to move the spring by force, it will affect its nourishing effect. That means that the spiritual spring must be somewhere around here. Once the soul essence is immersed in the spring, it can never be taken out until it is fully nourished. So, the soul essence and the spiritual spring must be hidden somewhere around here.

No loophole was able to escape from Jiang Chen's intelligence. He couldn't help but lick his mouth while thinking about the spiritual spring and soul essence. It seems like luck is on his side this time. He couldn't believe he would encounter such a lucky thing on his way to the Evil Clan.

Roar.....

On the other side, the two humans and demonic devil broke into another intense fight. The two of them seemed very determined to obtain the soul essence and spiritual spring and the ferocious devil didn't seem to have the intention of compromising. As such, a battle of life and death was inevitable in this case.

Go ahead and fight until all of you are severely wounded. Then I will reap the benefits for myself. The demonic devil's condition is getting worse and would soon be no match for the two. It will be my time to pick up the reward the moment they killed the demonic devil. Once I absorb the blood and Qi essence, the fifth level of the pagoda will immediately be condensed out. But I have to find the spiritual spring and soul essence first while they were still fighting. If I miss this golden opportunity, I would rather be struck to death by lightning.

Jiang Chen slowly casted out his spiritual power and circulated

the Great Soul Derivation Technique, searching the area for the traces of the spring and soul essence. The two late Divine Immortal experts and the demonic devil were fighting fiercely with one another. Neither of them would have imagined that a sneaky bastard was hiding in the dark.

Soon, he found a cave not far away. It appeared on the hillside, covered by thick vines. If one wasn't meticulous enough, one wouldn't be able to discover it. No matter how stealthy the place was, it wasn't able to escape Jiang Chen's senses.

After concealing his Qi, he casted out the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. With the concealing ability of the pagoda, he moved towards the cave slowly. None of the three Divine Immortal experts sensed his presence. In fact, he even successfully sneaked through the watch of eight late Golden Immortal experts back on One-Line-Mountain. The only time he was spotted by an expert was when he stuck out his hands to snatch the Regenerative Lotus.

He entered the cave in a flash. Inside the cave was a unique scene, as if another new world existed there. It differed so much from what he had imagined. He could feel a strong energy the moment he entered the cave. It was a pure energy. Taking a single breath of air gave him a refreshing feeling from head to toe.

In front was a pond piled up with disorderly stone. It wasn't a big pool. There was some kind of glittering and translucent liquid wriggling in the water. Above the pond drifted the white mist. Jiang Chen was able to tell that it wasn't an ordinary thing at first glance.

"It sure is a high grade spiritual spring. The existence of such spring depends on the law of Immortal World. One drop of this spring is enough to make a Ninth Grade Great Saint in Saint Origin World ascend to the Immortal World."

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered. The spiritual spring was undeniably a good treasure. It also had very strong effect. One drop of it could

make an early Heaven Immortal like Yan Qingcheng advance to the mid Heaven Immortal realm.

“Good stuff.”

Jiang Chen felt that his luck was soaring. He couldn't help thinking about the greedy Big Yellow when he saw this spiritual spring. If Big Yellow was here, he was afraid that Big Yellow would've already rushed into the pond to quench his insatiable thirst. If that was the case, Big Yellow wouldn't have problem breaking through to the half-step Divine Immortal realm.

Apart from the spiritual spring, there was also something drifting at the centre of the spring. Similarly, it glittered and was translucent. It radiated a certain kind of brilliance. Some fluid was moving inside of it and the aura it exuded was fascinating.

“This was the soul essence of an early Golden Immortal realm. Motherf*cker! I have hit the jackpot this time!”

After he discovered the level of the soul essence, he couldn't help but feel excited despite his disposition. In this trip to the Evil Clan, his trip could already be considered not in vain even if he failed to edify a demonic devil, the spiritual spring and soul essence was already enough to bring him boundless benefits.

“I won't be polite with it then, haha!”

Jiang Chen laughed loudly, then struck out his large palm, hurling the pond into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The instant the pond was taken away, gloom started to devour the cave.

Outside the cave, the severely wounded demonic devil suddenly lost the connection with the soul essence. His facial expression changed drastically, and immediately, he spun and flew towards the cave without hesitation because the soul essence had the greatest importance of all.

Chapter 1224 – Everything is in Vain

“Wanting to take your spiritual spring and soul essence and go? You won’t have the chance.”

The two Divine Immortal human experts thought that the demonic devil had chosen to flee. However, having spent lots of effort in forcing the demonic devil to such a vulnerable state, it was impossible for them to let it go at this critical moment. Almost as soon as the demonic devil moved, the two of them, with their combat swords, rushed forth and blocked the devil’s path on either side.

“Roar... Bastard! You despicable humans!”

The demonic devil cursed furiously. Due to it only thinking about the soul essence, it lost its interest in battling. The devil blocked the attacks casually, but this would not help in defending the joint attacks of the two late Divine Immortal experts. When it blocked one of the sword strikes with effort, another sword was slashed on its body. Despite the demonic devil’s incredible solid physique, it wasn’t invincible to the sharpness of an Immortal Sword. The sword left a cut so deep the bone inside became visible and blood gushed out frantically.

The demon let out a wail and swore even louder. As it had a certain connection with the soul essence, it knew someone was in the cave right now and naturally, this must be related to these two Divine Immortal experts.

In its point of view, the human inside the cave must be a comrade of the two. The two of them had come out to confront it while the third expert sneaked into the cave during their fight.

But then, no matter how furious the demonic devil was, it could never turn the situation around. Its anger had in turn severely affect its mind. Taking the injuries into account, it couldn’t exert out its strength fully. Being blocked by the two experts, one at the

front and one from behind, it had no chance of going back into the cave.

Jiang Chen was watching the scene on the other side. His smile was full of delight. He thanked the two human experts in his heart for being so nice to him. If it wasn't them who stopped the demonic devil, he might have a big problem once the devil rushed in.

There were two parables that were similar to the current situation, namely 'the mantis stalks the cicada, but behind them lurks the oriole' and 'when the snipe and clam grapple, it is the fisherman who profits'. The demonic devil had misunderstood that Jiang Chen was a comrade of the two, whereas the two experts were clueless about Jiang Chen's existence. If they knew in the end that their painstaking effort was only to grant the other person's wish and all their efforts would be in vain, they probably would spurt out blood on the spot.

Roar... Roar...

Outside, the demonic devil roared repeatedly, launching the last intense battle with the two. Despite its severe injuries, it was still domineeringly ferocious. The two experts didn't dare to neglect it.

However, the two Divine Immortal experts had experienced hundreds of battles. They weren't nervous while facing the demonic devil. What they intended to do was to slowly torture it to death. The present situation was in their complete favour and the demonic devil would die for sure, so they didn't need to be hasty about getting the spiritual spring and soul essence. As long as the demonic devil was eliminated, the two treasures would become theirs.

Jiang Chen should have left the place after obtaining the spiritual spring to quickly refine the treasures, but when he saw the scene outside, he decided to stay and watch the battle. What the two human experts would take after killing the demonic devil would be

only the demon soul, leaving the remains behind. As such, Jiang Chen's pagoda would be able to absorb the corpse of the late Divine Immortal demonic devil which by far the greatest nourishment for the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

The idea of him hiding in the dark, waiting for them to get rid of the demonic devil, then collect the loot was flawless.

Chi La... Chi La...

The battle was getting fiercer, but the demonic devil had lost its stand. The human experts were constantly leaving wounds on the devil's majestic body. The demonic devil's Qi along with its combat strength were declining rapidly. It could last in this battle for two minutes at best, after that, it would be finished off by the two experts.

"It's a pity. It's really a pity."

Jiang Chen shook his head and sighed. It sure was wasteful for a mighty late Divine Immortal demonic devil to fall like this. His purpose of heading towards the Evil Abyss was to turn a demonic devil into his fighter by edifying it. It would be perfect if he could edify this severely injured devil as he wouldn't have to venture into the lands of the Evil Clan.

But he knew that those two Divine Immortal experts would never let the demonic devil live. So, his intention of heading towards the Evil Clan remained unchanged.

Roar...

Finally, after a minute of persistence, the demonic devil lost its ability to defend. Its large body fell downwards, into the pool below, creating a huge splash.

After getting rid of the demonic devil, the two experts' Qi had become somewhat unstable. It could tell how much energy they had expended in the battle.

"Dammit! The demonic devil of Evil Clan is truly ferocious and

hard to deal with. Even though this bastard has already consumed a big portion of its energy, we still needed great effort to finish it off. If it was at its peak state, I'm afraid we will be no match for it. Anyway, its demon soul is good stuff. This demon soul is different from the demon soul of demonic beasts. There is a very powerful evil Qi inside it. It can help to boost our ferociousness."

One of them spoke. His heart palpitated as he thought about the scariness of the demonic devils.

"Don't care about the demon soul first. Let's go and take the spiritual spring and soul essence. Those are the true treasures that we are looking for. I have investigated that the soul essence belonged to a mighty early Golden Immortal demonic devil. If you and I refine it, we won't have problem pushing our cultivation base to half-step Golden Immortal realm," the other one said. To them, getting the soul essence and the spiritual spring were the top objective.

Without hesitation, the two of them flashed into the cave, but in an instant, shock was seen on their faces because what they saw inside differed too much from what they expected to see.

"What happened? Why was there nothing here?" One of them said in astonishment.

"Look, it seems someone has just dug out something from here. No, I can sense the remaining Qi of the spiritual spring here. This has to be the place where the spiritual spring was at. That demonic devil has already taken it with force."

The other expert turned furious when he saw nothing was left in the cave.

Currently, Jiang Chen was still hiding in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, observing the reaction of the two experts.

"No, it wasn't the demonic devil. It came here to nourish its soul essence. It must have placed the soul essence in the spring. Besides,

we found nothing left in its body. Look at the traces here. Apparently, someone has just dug it away. The demonic devil was engaged in intense battles with us the whole time, it couldn't be it that dug the treasures. Just now the demonic devil suddenly turned and rushed towards the cave. This proved that it sensed someone was taking away its soul essence. Dammit! The soul essence and the spiritual spring must have seized away from someone."

The expert was smart enough to figure all these out. They now felt incredibly angry and aggrieved when they found out their rewards were stolen away by an unknown person.

Chapter 1225 – Fifteen Level

Hong.....

Anger surged out of the bodies of the two Divine Immortal experts when they realised that someone had stolen their reward. The kind of anger that they were feeling right now was unimaginable. Immediately, they casted out their divine sense, sweeping every corner of the cave.

“Let’s go over there and check. That thief must still be nearby. Once we found that thief, we will cut him into million pieces.”

The experts were infuriated. They turned into rays of light and exited the cave, beginning to scan the valley thoroughly. They thought that the person who stole the spiritual spring and the soul essence must have a low cultivation base, otherwise this unknown person wouldn’t have sneaked into the cave while they were busy fighting the demonic devil. This was the Evil Abyss. If the person was a half-step Golden Immortal expert, he wouldn’t make such a stealthy move because it would damage his reputation. He would certainly seize the treasures from them openly and even crush them to death.

Jiang Chen was quietly watching everything that was happening outside in his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

The two experts examined the area several times. They had scanned through almost every tree and grass within a thousand miles of the valley, but found nothing in the end. Out of helplessness, they returned to the cave. They gritted their teeth unpleasantly when they confirmed that it was really empty.

“Son of a b*tch! Who did this?”

“Despicable! All of our effort have been in vain because of him! Once we catch that thief, we will rip him to pieces!”

The two of them got even angrier than before. It was fortunate

that their lungs didn't burst because of such fury. Eventually, they decided to leave in disappointment.

"Come on, I'm afraid that the thief has already gone out of this area. We can only regard this as an unfortunate situation." One of them said.

"We can't return empty handed. That demon soul is also a good stuff. Let's dig it out."

Another expert flew out of the cave and dug the demon soul out of the demonic devil's body. Jiang Chen saw what was going on, but he didn't think that it was a pity. As he had already obtained an even greater benefit – the early Golden Immortal soul essence, he could let go of the demon soul of late Divine Immortal realm. Besides, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda didn't require demon soul. It would be beneficial to him as long as those two bastards didn't destroy the corpse of the demonic devil.

Apparently, the two didn't have any interest in the devil's corpse and didn't want to waste their effort in destroying it. After digging out the demon soul, the two of them left the valley and disappeared.

In the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Jiang Chen's mouth curled into a smile. Although the two experts had already left, he waited silently in the pagoda instead of coming out.

Ten minutes later, the two of them appeared again on the scene, but after checking the area once more, they shook their heads and left.

At this moment, Jiang Chen came out of the pagoda. As an experienced and crafty expert, the tricks of those two were no match for him.

"I have profited massively this time! Kaka!"

Jiang Chen laughed with delight and flashed out of the cave. He grabbed the devil's corpse with his huge hand and summoned the

Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. When the pagoda sensed the bloody scent, it automatically devoured it. The size of the corpse was 30 meters large, but instantly, it was sucked dry and turned into dust as the wind blew, dissipating in the air.

Hong Long.....

After absorbing this huge energy, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda immediately let out a rumble. The fifteenth level was condensing at such a speed that anyone could see it with their naked eyes. The energy that was contained in a late Divine Immortal demonic devil was massive.

As the fifteenth level of the pagoda was condensed, great things were happening inside Jiang Chen's body – new dragon marks started to form.

That was the energy channeled by the pagoda. It was the purest energy. Unlike the energy from refining a demon soul, this energy dealt no harm to his foundation.

Soon, the fifteen level of the pagoda was fully condensed, but the energy obtained had yet to be used up. It continued until a quarter of the sixteenth level was formed. Currently, 10000 new dragon marks had been formed inside his body, increasing his combat strength once more.

Buzz... Buzz...

A buzzing sound was heard from the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. After the fifteenth level was formed, the radiance of the pagoda became richer and the dragon marks became clearer. It exuded an ancient and wild Qi that made people afraid of looking at it directly.

The body of the pagoda became stronger and its defensive strength was enhanced. This aroused Jiang Chen's eagerness to see it evolve rapidly. The more the levels of the pagoda were condensed, the greater the aid that it could provide to him. He

believed that as the pagoda continued to level up, something magical would happen. This was what he anticipated the most.

“My foundation has almost fully recovered. After refining some of the spiritual spring and soul essence, it won’t be a problem for me to advance to the mid Heaven Immortal realm.”

He was very confident with the soul essence. It was item that had the purest energy, any expert who refined it would obtain boundless benefits.

Without wanting to stay any longer, he flew skywards and continued his journey towards the Evil Clan. There were 36 cities in the outer region of the Evil Abyss. It was far more complicated than what he had imagined. Given his current strength, even if he broke through to the mid Heaven Immortal realm after absorbing the soul essence, he would still be incapable of dominating the entire outer region. Therefore, getting a demonic devil as his helper was crucial.

On his way, he began to refine the soul essence along with the spiritual spring. Due to this being the soul essence of an early Golden Immortal realm, he couldn’t fully refine it a single time. To achieve the next level, he needed to refine it slowly. He would then keep whatever’s left after the refinement, because that might be useful to him in the future.

New dragon marks were forming again in his Qi Sea. Surging energy was channeled to all of his body parts like waves after waves. What he felt was really refreshing and intoxicating.

“The spiritual spring is definitely a good stuff. It can’t be compared with the spiritual spring in the Mortal World. My body has benefited greatly. I will leave the rest of the spring to the others. I’m sure that they’ll get more benefits compared to me when they refine this spiritual spring.”

Said Jiang Chen. The Spiritual spring was a natural resource that was scarce and rare, but it wasn’t good enough for his super

abnormal body. If this was used on someone like Yan Qingcheng, it would surely bring her boundless benefits, unlocking the hidden potential in her body.

Chapter 1226 – Mid Heaven Immortal Realm

Jiang Chen didn't have a very high goal at the moment. It would be enough as long as he could advance to the mid Heaven Immortal realm. In this trip to the Evil Clan, he had hoped to edify a late Divine Immortal demonic devil. With his present combat strength, it would be a problem for him to fight a mid Divine Immortal opponent, but if his opponent was a demonic devil, it would give him greater advantage. Whether it was the Edifying Light or the True Thunderfire or True Dragon Flame, each one of these skills was the greatest natural enemy of the demonic devils. And, with the Great Divination Art, he could suppress the demonic devil more. If he could edify one late Divine Immortal demonic devil, he would be able to bring peace and safety to Fragrant Sky City because one late Divine Immortal demonic devil was capable of moving across the outer region of the Evil Abyss unhindered.

Because he had only two days of time and he had some delay at the valley, he felt compelled to travel at his maximum speed.

Buzz... Buzz...

Buzzing sound rang constantly in his Qi Sea, as waves were rolling inside of him. New dragon marks were being created non-stop and his energy level was soaring.

One thousand, three thousand, five thousand dragon marks!...

The number dragon marks increased rapidly. In just a few minutes, it reached the total of 550 000 dragon marks, the exact number for breaking through to the mid Heaven Immortal realm. The bones all over his body produced cracking sound. Another metamorphosis took place in him.

“Breaking through to the mid Heaven Immortal realm is truly satisfying, but I can't refine the Golden Immortal soul essence completely now as my body won't be able to bear it and it may cause problems in my foundation.”

In the path of cultivation, it was important to take a gradual and orderly approach. Although the dragon transformation skill was a very abnormal technique and its advancement speed was faster than any cultivator, he would never venture further because of greed. He would only make that decision after measuring his own condition.

Just like now, after the total reached 550 000 dragon marks, he continued to condense another 10 000 dragon marks so that his foundation would be fortified.

The advancement only consumed a fifth of the soul essence. He kept the remaining portion. A Golden Immortal cultivator was an expert who had already comprehended the profound meaning of Great Luo. As such, the degree of energy contained inside its soul essence was incomparable.

“This soul essence is really a good stuff. It seem this trip is truly rewarding. The demon soul of the demonic devil is more powerful than other demonic beasts and if I can get plenty of them, the benefits I’ll get will be unimaginable.”

He curled the corner of his mouth, filling with anticipation. The stronger the opponent, the more exciting he became.

The Evil Abyss was a huge spatial zone that was supposed to be under the control of demonic devils, but with the arrival of the Evil Lord half of the domain had been occupied by humans. But still, one couldn’t ignore the terror of the demonic devils.

Despite the Evil Lord's power , he hadn’t been able to destroy the Evil Clan. It could be seen that the Evil Clan had been ingrained in this land and the environment here had given them endless advantages.

As much of the time was spent in the valley, it was already evening when Jiang Chen arrived the border of the territory of Evil Clan.

Hu... Hu...

Gloomy and cold devil wind howled. Huge changes were observed in the surroundings. It was frightful, cold, and the thick devil Qi had blotted out the stars and sunlight. This was the other half of the Evil Abyss, but it seemed completely unlike the other world.

“Sure enough, this is the hive of the demonic devils. Although it isn’t as bad as the Devil World, the dense evil Qi in the air can arouse fear to any human. If I’m not mistaken, this territory bears some similarities to the human territory. The territory may also be divided into outer, middle and inner regions. The place I’m at now should be categorised as the outer region which there won’t be a lot of powerful demonic devils. Anyway, I will survey the area first.”

His eyes glittered. He concealed his Qi and moved into the outer region of the Evil Clan stealthily.

While you were on this piece of land, evening was equivalent to late night as the billowy devil Qi had blocked every light from above.

Roar... Roar... Roar...

The roars of the devils could be heard everywhere. They could send trembling sensation down anyone’s spine. Jiang Chen followed the nearest roar. Dozens of miles away in the wilderness was three demonic devils with black scales. They were walking side by side, radiating their frightening devil Qi.

They were not very strong. The strongest among them was a late Heaven Immortal expert while the other two were mid Heaven Immortal experts. Jiang Chen would never put any one of them in his eyes as he could get rid of them with casual strikes.

The three demonic devils continued with what they’re doing, not sensing any sign of danger. All of a sudden, a gale blew, a blood-red

dragon claw fell from the sky, entrapping three of them entirely. They became suffocated by tremendous pressure acted against them.

Roar...

They roared frenziedly and unleashed all of their energy, attempting to break the dragon claw above. Too bad, the dragon claw was too powerful for them. Their current situation was akin to three ants trying to shake the tree.

Bang! Bang!

The two mid Heaven Immortals' bodies burst all of a sudden, and turned into mist of blood, but it was sucked away by an invisible door very quickly. No remains were left after their death. Gruesome was no longer suitable to describe such a scene.

The other late Heaven Immortal demonic devil was scared to death. Despite of its ferocious nature, it had never seen such a brutal killing method. Not even a single drop of blood essence was left after the bodies exploded as if they had just vanished. If it wasn't witnessing the scene with its own eyes, it wouldn't believe it.

"You'd better be honest with me. Otherwise, you will die more miserably than them."

An indifferent voice was heard. Then, a good-looking white-clad youth emerged in front of the demonic devil. When it saw Jiang Chen, its eyes blazed with fury and fear. It wasn't a fool. It had the same spiritual intelligence as humans. It could naturally guess the previous scene was related to this young human.

"Human, how dare you come to the territory of Evil Clan!" clamoured the demonic devil, but the fear in its eyes had reduced a little as it had already figured out its own fate.

In the Evil Abyss, there was nothing to talk about between humans and demonic devils. Whenever they saw each other, it was

either the devil would die or the human. Thus, it was impossible that the devil hoped for this human to let it go.

Chapter 1227 – Pounding Violently

“Tell me, how many late Divine Immortal demonic devils are in this region?” asked Jiang Chen straightforwardly as he didn’t want to waste any more time with the demonic devil. He believed that this demonic devil would tell him the truth as the devil had already known its own fate well. Therefore, it was only logical for it to want to have the other Divine Immortal demonic devils avenge its murderer.

“There’s a tribe three hundred miles ahead. It’s also where I belong. The leader of the tribe is a powerful late Divine Immortal expert.”

Sure enough, the demonic devil answered Jiang Chen’s question without contemplation.

“There are a total of how many late Divine Immortal experts?” Jiang Chen asked again.

From what the demonic devil had said earlier, it wasn’t hard to guess that the demonic devils of the Evil Clan were divided into separate tribes. In addition, every tribe varied in terms of grade. The tribe that was led by a late Divine Immortal demonic devil must be the weakest tribe in the region. This was similar to the thirty six cities in the outer region of human territory. There were greater and more powerful cities in the middle and inner regions.

What he was most concerned of was that there might be several late Divine Immortal experts living in the tribe. If there was only one, he wouldn’t hesitate to strike and flatten that entire tribe, but if there were more, he needed to be extra careful. Given his current cultivation, he could only deal with one late Divine Immortal demonic devil.

“One,” the devil answered.

“You ignorant and conceited human! You think you can break

into the tribe with just your strength? You will certainly be eaten by my race. Don't you think about leaving this region alive once you enter it."

The demonic devil seemed composed because it knew it was going to die.

"That is none of your concern."

He didn't want to delay any further. He exerted strength in his dragon claw and crushed the demonic devil to death. Subsequently, he circulated the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to absorb every blood and Qi essence left. The pagoda was like an insatiable stomach. Although its maximum level was ninety-nine, Jiang Chen had no idea how much energy it needed, so he would never let go of any resource he could collect.

His next goal was crystal clear – launching a massacre at the tribe. This would help him complete the condensation of the sixteenth level. Then, he had to figure out ways to edify the leader of the tribe and bring it back to Fragrant Sky City.

This process might seem easy and simple, but in fact, it was extremely difficult because it involved the matter of time. If he stirred up a big movement in the tribe, it would arouse the notice of the other tribes. This was after all the territory of the Evil Clan. He would be in deep trouble once he was surrounded by stronger demonic devils.

So, given his limited amount of time, it wasn't realistic for him to absorb all the demonic devils in the clan.

"The main target is the late Divine Immortal demonic devil."

Jiang Chen's eyes turned sharp; he flew towards the tribe with quick speed. Three hundred miles away was a black castle about the size of Fragrant Sky City, but its atmosphere was completely different. Dark clouds condensed by devil Qi had blotted out the sky above, giving humans the sense of gloominess.

In addition to the devil Qi, there was also an invisible Qi. It was the Qi of evil, sins and killings. Similarly, it gave anyone who came here the creeps.

Jiang Chen charged at the castle without hesitation. He straightaway turning into his dragon form and held the Heavenly Saint Sword. As he rushed forth, a sharp and domineering Qi radiated from his body.

Roar...

There were some demonic devils who noticed Jiang Chen immediately. They instantly let out roars that tore the darkness. Every demonic devil in the Evil Clan had a common feature – ferociousness. Subsequently, they rushed forward to meet the intruder.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen lifted his sword and made a swing, creating a ray of light that turned into a blood-red dragon. Equivalently, it broke the night sky and brushed past the demonic devils, slashing all of them into halves before they could even let out wails.

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was summoned. It wrapped around the corpses and sucked them dry instantly, leaving the remains falling to the ground.

After killing the few demonic devils, he swung his Heavenly Saint Sword, slashing out a sharp and indestructible sword Qi. A huge blood-red dragon descended from the sky, cutting the large front gate of the castle in half.

He had struck an explosive skill; he wanted to get the attention of the chief and achieve his goal quickly.

Roar... Roar...

It had shaken the entire tribe. In an instant, the air in the castle was filled with roars. Each and every demonic devil flew skywards. There were a few dozen at first, then it became a hundred and a

few hundred. From afar, they looked dense and black. They rushed towards Jiang Chen's direction like a tide. To the Evil Clan, the only solution they have when they faced an uninvited guest was to get rid of it using the most violent means.

Every one of them raced towards Jiang Chen like a storm, so massive that it could scare off any human expert even before the battle started.

“Haha! Come!”

Jiang Chen laughed loudly. This was what he wanted. He would kill all of them regardless of how many there were. Then, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda would absorb every last bit of their energy. As most of them were in the Heaven Immortal realm, they couldn't deal any serious threat to Jiang Chen.

Hong Long...

He summoned the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. It then enlarged into a blood-red pagoda. Countless images of blood-red dragons revolved around the pagoda, casting out divine light. The demonic devils could feel a sense of suppression coming from their soul.

After that, the pagoda slammed forward violently.

Bang... Bang... Bang...

The solid bodies of the demonic devils couldn't withstand the ruthless smash of the pagoda. This indicated how strong the pagoda was. Every demonic devil was smashed into pieces, and the mists of blood that was created were quickly absorbed by the pagoda.

Hong Long.....

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had become the most frenzied mountain. Every smash of it caused the death of a few dozen demonic devils. And then, it absorbed all the blood and Qi essences. In the next few smashes, two hundred demonic devils had lost their lives.

However, a crowd of demonic devils were still coming forward non-stop. A tribe consisted of at least ten thousand demonic devils. Once their ferocity had been ignited, they would go mad and difficult to stop.

Currently, Jiang Chen's black hair was fluttering in the breeze, making him look like a murderous devil king. Every essence that was absorbed brought him benefits. As such, this match would be a massive feast to him.

Chapter 1228 – The Sixteenth Level

A great number of the demonic devils were charging forward fearlessly as if they couldn't feel any sense of danger, while the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda eradicated everything in its path. Despite the mass number of demonic devils, they weren't considered enough to feed the appetite of the pagoda. In this short period of time, the benefits brought by the pagoda helped Jiang Chen form 1000 dragon marks, enhancing his combat strength even more.

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had turned into a moving mountain, crushing everything in its path. No matter how many the demonic devils were, it wasn't enough to overwhelm the mountainous pagoda. Big bulks of demonic devils were constantly being devoured by the pagoda. Although these demonic devils had low cultivation, they were still a massive number. By now, at least a thousand demonic devils were killed by the pagoda. This was an incomparably large number, because the blood and Qi essence of a thousand Heaven Immortal demonic devils had helped to almost finish the condensation of the sixteenth level.

Roar...

Such massive casualties was surely an irrecoverable loss to the tribe. The demonic devils at the back finally understood the situation and many of them began to retreat. Despite their ferocious nature, they weren't idiots. They knew that they could avoid such senseless death.

Swoosh... Swoosh... Swoosh...

This movement finally alarmed the higher ups of the tribe. At least a dozen powerful Qi flew out from the centre of the castle. These demonic devils were larger and sturdier. Their cultivation was the most terrifying part as they were all Divine Immortal experts. The most powerful among them was on par with the one Jiang Chen encountered in the valley. A late Divine Immortal

expert.

“Son of a b*tch! What’s that thing? How dare he come here and start a massacre! He’s courting death!”

When the chief of the tribe saw the dramatic decrease in his troops, he went mad and locked on Jiang Chen’s position with his eyes and murderous Qi.

“A thing that looks like a human and a beast? It should be some kind of secret art practiced by humans. This human is so arrogant and bold to attack our tribe while being only a Heaven Immortal. Leader, allow me to behead him and bring his head back to you.”

An early Divine Immortal demonic devil unleashed its Qi. As soon as it finished speaking, it lunged forward. It would never put a Heaven Immortal expert in its eyes, because a Heaven Immortal expert was no different than a lowly insect that could be crushed to death casually.

“Get lost!”

It clamoured loudly. The demonic devils which were engaged in the intense fight quickly made way for it. Each and every one of them gritted their teeth, wanting to devour Jiang Chen very badly. However, they had already anticipated Jiang Chen’s end. They knew that once the Divine Immortal higher up took action against this intruder, he would die without a doubt.

“This pagoda seems very magical. I’m going to have it.”

When the demonic devil saw the hovering pagoda, its eyes were filled with greed. It grabbed the pagoda with its large black palm.

“The condensation of the sixteenth level will be complete after killing you!” Jiang Chen shouted.

He grabbed the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and hurled it at the demonic devil. With his current combat strength, he could instantly kill an early Divine Immortal opponent. Besides, the skills and means that he had could greatly suppress these devils.

This was just what he wanted to happen. Presently, the pagoda has already reached the last step in condensing the sixteenth level. If it could devour an early Divine Immortal demonic devil, the condensation of the sixteenth level would be completed.

Hong Long...

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda let out rumbling roars. The roar of a dragon could be heard from the pagoda itself, as if there were 10 000 true dragons hiding inside of it, filling the entire pagoda with the aura of divine dragons.

“Not good.”

When the conceited demonic devil was about to come into contact with the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, its facial expression changed dramatically. Not only could it feel the power of this pagoda, but more importantly, it could also feel a dragon’s aura and the purest Yang energy under the heavens. The devil was instantly suppressed, restricting it from using all of its power.

Even if the early Divine Immortal demonic devil was in its peak state, it would be impossible for it to resist Jiang Chen’s Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Bang!

Everything was already too late when the devil sensed the danger. The speed of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was too fast. It pounded severely on the demonic devil’s body. Despite being at the early Divine Immortal realm, the demonic devil still faced the same end as its Heaven Immortal juniors. Its huge body was smashed to pieces on the spot.

Hu... Hu...

Gale howled. The corpse of the demonic devil was completely devoured by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Instantly, the sixteenth level brightened up. That was the indication of a massive energy. The instant the energy of the early Divine Immortal demonic devil

was absorbed, the sixteenth level was fully condensed. The light radiating from it was dazzling.

“What? What kind of treasure is that? How can it be so powerful?”

“I can feel a sense of sacred Qi within the pagoda. Additionally, the Purest Yang Qi could severely suppress us. However, the fact that this brat can kill an early Divine Immortal opponent while being only a mid Heaven Immortal is truly mystical.”

“Chief, although this pagoda could suppress our power, it is without a doubt a rare treasure. Since this brat brought us a gift, we should never refuse it.”

.....

Those Divine Immortal experts were shocked. They had never thought that a puny Heaven Immortal expert to carry such a powerful pagoda and had the ability to kill a Divine Immortal expert. Apart from all of these, he had also killed at least a thousand of their forces, creating a major loss to their entire tribe.

If they were able to get their hands on this blood-red pagoda, they might be able to recover all of their losses.

“Let me test his strength.”

A mid Divine Immortal demonic devil volunteered. He took a leap forth and arrived before Jiang Chen. However, the moment it struck out its palm to get the pagoda, it vanished. It was recalled by Jiang Chen. Since the sixteenth level had already been fully condensed, he didn't need it anymore.

“Mid Divine Immortal demonic devil... just the right time to test my combat strength.”

Jiang Chen would never decline any challenge. Given his present strength, it was more than enough to handle any mid Divine Immortal expert, let alone a mid Divine Immortal demonic devil.

Xiao!

His Heavenly Saint Sword let out a deafening howl, as the Qi of the sword soared up to the sky. Under his control, the sword turned into a blood-red dragon and slashed at the mid Divine Immortal demonic devil.

This was a sword strike clad with the Purest Yang Qi and the circulation of the dragon transformation skill. The degree of suppression on the devil was unimaginable. Furthermore, the surface of the sword was now enshrouded with terrifying flames. Whether it was the True Thunderfire or the True Dragon Flame, both of them were the greatest enemy of the demonic devils. Therefore, it was the demonic devils' misfortune for encountering Jiang Chen today.

Chapter 1229 – The Fierce Combat in the Wilderness

All of a sudden, the mighty demonic devil felt a surge of tremendous pressure. In a split second, it drew out a demonic weapon to block the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Hong Long.....

The impact was earth-shattering. It tore everything apart, creating endless waves of winds that carried inexhaustible Qi of destruction. Due to the effect of the suppression, the demonic devil wasn't able to exert its most powerful combat power. It was sent flying away by Jiang Chen's strike. It was totally no match for him.

Barf!

That mid Divine Immortal demonic devil spurted out a mouthful of blood. The demonic weapon in its hand was trembling and blood was trickling down its palm. It was defeated with just a single strike.

However, this demonic devil was after all a powerful mid Divine Immortal expert, unlike any ordinary early Divine Immortal demonic devil. Despite its injuries, it was still intact because it hadn't received a lethal attack, but the scene was still shocking. It had put every demonic devil including the chief of the tribe into a shocked state. No one was able to imagine that a mid Heaven Immortal human could have such a powerful combat strength and could even injure an opponent who was many levels higher than him.

“How could this human brat be this powerful? Isn't his power a little too excessive?”

“F*ck! Is this bastard truly a mid Heavenly Immortal human? As demonic devils of Evil Clan, the strength of our physique gave us a huge advantage over humans. Although this brat has the means to

suppress our ability, the fact that he could defeat a mid Divine Immortal devil with only a mid Heaven Immortal strength is unbelievable.”

“This brat is a heaven defying one. He has to be someone sent by the Evil Lord. The Evil Lord has given us lots of trouble since his arrival. If this brat is able to grow further, he will pose a serious threat to our clan. Today, we have to get rid of him together.”

.....

Every demonic devil was astounded. The group of devils which were rushing forward finally settled down and retreated. They weren't fools. Before this, they only knew an intruder had broken into their territory. Given their ferocious nature, they would naturally lunged forward to eliminate the enemy. The death of thousands of their kind told them that every one of them would die regardless of how many there were if they still pushed forward.

Those Divine Immortal experts were ready to act, especially the few mid Divine Immortal experts. They were ready to take down this abnormal human with their joint force.

“Back down, all of you.”

The leader of the tribe extended his hand to halt the devils which were about to strike. Its eyes were as cold as a blade, fixing at Jiang Chen. He had never put Jiang Chen in his eyes from the very beginning. In his eyes, a mid Heaven Immortal human was similar to an ant and didn't require him to personally act, but the previous eye-opening scene changed his view of Jiang Chen. Only a late Divine Immortal expert like him would be able to take down this genius who could defeat a mid Divine Immortal demonic devil.

Jiang Chen revealed a trace of a cold smirk when he saw the chief volunteering himself to fight him. Without saying a word, he turned and fled. The shockwave created here had been huge. So he needed to get to another battlefield as soon as possible. After all, this was the territory of the Evil Clan, which was unsuitable for a

large-scale battle. This was the reason why he had launched a massive attack at the tribe. The only purpose was to attract the chief of the tribe to come out. He would be facing bad luck if the leader didn't emerge after all the shockwave.

“Humph! You dare to flee after massacring so many of my devils?”

The chief harrumphed coldly when he saw Jiang Chen fleeing away. Without hesitation, he turned into a black light and chased after Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen's action had made his resoluteness to kill Jiang Chen firmer. In his point of view, Jiang Chen fled away because he was afraid of him, otherwise, he wouldn't have fled.

“Come on.”

Jiang Chen casted his dragon wings and flew at an extremely quick speed, disappearing in the sky in a blink. The chief followed quickly and vanished.

“Should we go after him as well?” One of the mid Divine Immortal demonic devil asked.

“No, that brat is virtually dead once the chief engaged him in a fight. Judging on how heaven defying he was, he was probably a follower of the Evil Lord. We should guard our tribe in case another human comes to attack us.”

Another demonic devil spoke. Apart from having high confidence in their chief's ability, they had also already concluded Jiang Chen's death. After all, Jiang Chen was the one who fled.

In a land of wilderness thousands of miles away.

Jiang Chen came to a halt and turned to face the chief. This deserted land was far away from the previous battlefield and was well suited for battle. As such, Jiang Chen had nothing else to worry about.

“Why aren't you running anymore?” The chief stopped and asked coldly.

“If you flee now, perhaps you still have a chance.” Jiang Chen shrugged and mocked.

After listening to this, the leader of the demonic devil was stunned, but burst out into a laugh right after that. “Haha..... human brat, is your mind already fried? You have killed so many of my devils, but I will still give you a chance. Kowtow before me immediately and I assure you to have a quick and pleasant death.”

“You must not know that you aren’t the first who said this to me. And all of those who said this word ended up dead. There was no exception. Perhaps I won’t kill you because you are useful to me.”

Said Jiang Chen plainly. What he said was extremely arrogant, but those words were the truth. Anyone who had said this line to him was no longer alive.

“Courting death!”

The chief wasted no time. He promptly unleashed a monstrous Qi and struck out a large black devil cloud and smashed against Jiang Chen like a solid mountain. This was an incomparably fierce attack and was a full-fledged attack of a late Divine Immortal expert. The energy contained inside of it was so huge that it could overturn mountains and seas. Any ordinary expert wouldn’t be able to withstand it. Even a mid Divine Immortal expert would be severely wounded by this attack.

Hong Long.....

Jiang Chen was fearless. He launched his palm, striking out the powerful and huge True Dragon Palm that was enshrouded with flames. As the dark cloud came in contact with the flames, its Qi shrunk by half and its size was reduced slightly as if it had encountered its natural enemy.

Chapter 1230 – The Power of the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd

“What? What on earth is this skill? How could it suppress my attack greatly?”

The demonic chief was shocked. There was no way that he wouldn't be shocked, such an incident was rare and unprecedented. He was a mighty late Divine Immortal expert which had a huge advantage against a mid Heaven Immortal expert, but now, he was being suppressed by this human. This was something that he had never dreamt of.

Chi La!

The True Dragon Palm collided with the devil cloud, ripping apart the dark cloud into fragments. Jiang Chen was wild and fierce. With his current strength, even by circulating the Great Divination Art, it was somewhat difficult for him deal with a late Divine Immortal opponent, but if the opponent was a demonic devil of the Evil Clan, it would be different. Under the effect of suppression, it had greatly reduced the gap between his strength and his opponent. Although it would be slightly difficult to eliminate this late Divine Immortal opponent, it wasn't hard for him to edify it completely.

The chief's body shook intensely, but he was yet to be defeated. He immediately erased every disdainful thoughts that he had for Jiang Chen.

“The Wheel of Evil.”

He struck out his ultimate skill – the formidable wheel of evil. This was a unique combat technique possessed by the Evil Clan. It had a very powerful force of attack. Its size was as huge as a house. Its circular surface was full of sharp teeth and dense evil Qi. At the centre of the wheel was a shape of an evil face that gave people the

creeps.

Hong Long.....

The Wheel of Evil roared and lunged at Jiang Chen. This wasn't a true demonic weapon, but it looked like a real weapon that was fully condensed out of energy. And the damage it could deal was unimaginable.

“Just the right time.”

Jiang Chen's eyes brightened up. The might of his opponent had ignited his combat intent. The Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand began to roar, sending waves after waves of sound. Then, it turned completely into a true blood-red dragon that radiated invincible might and heat of flames. The flames were produced out of the fusion of the True Thunderfire and True Dragon Flames.

Roar.....

A dragon's roar rumbled the sky. The Heavenly Saint Sword stuck down like the Nine Major Lightning Tribulation, slashing at the Wheel of Evil.

The Wheel of Evil originally contained an unparalleled momentum, but the instant the Heavenly Saint Sword was swung, it had suddenly lost half of its momentum away, just like what happened to the dark cloud before. This caused the chief to almost spurt out a mouthful of blood. Such a battle was undoubtedly too frustrating to fight.

Hong Long.....

When the body of the Heavenly Saint Sword collided with the Wheel of Evil, it produced a deafening and thunderous noise. It lit up the entire sky above the wilderness like a true lightning, burning away all the devil Qi within a hundred miles of range.

The Heavenly Saint Sword was overwhelmingly strong. After its advancement to the Heaven Realm Immortal Weapon, its power had been enhanced further. During the collision, the Wheel of Evil

was slashed into half, but the Heavenly Saint Sword also received a tremendous shock and was deflected backwards.

“What a powerful human brat! It seems like I won’t be able to defeat you without using my true ultimate skill.”

The chief was amazed. His Wheel of Evil couldn’t even deal any damage to the opponent, let alone killing him, but he wasn’t going to retreat because he still have an even stronger means of attack.

“The Wheel of Evil.”

The chief shouted once more. Devil aura was circulating all over his body and the demonic Qi soared up to the sky. The dense Qi of evil had encompassed almost everything around. His body then enlarged by three times before striking out another Wheel of Evil. But this time, it wasn’t just one wheel. There were three of them and their momentum was stronger than before.

Jiang Chen’s facial expression remained unchanged while seeing such fierce attack. Originally, he could interrupt the devil’s attack the moment it was launched by using the Great Divination Art. In this way, the devil’s strength would be restricted once more, putting Jiang Chen in an extremely favourable position, but because he wanted to test his own strength, he didn’t choose to use the Great Divination Art.

He withdrew the Heavenly Saint Sword, but this didn’t mean that he was going to defend this attack with bare hands. Just as he withdrew the sword, he took out the large golden halberd that was left by Ouyang He.

Earlier, he had already cultivated the first style of the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes – Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool. Now that no one was around except him and his opponent, he naturally wouldn’t miss the chance of testing the strength of this technique. This was also the reason he didn’t use the Great Divination Art.

However, he was still concerned of one thing when using this

technique. If the technique was too powerful for the demonic devil to handle, the opponent would die.

Of course, this was less likely to happen because the demonic devil was after all, a mighty late Divine Immortal expert and Jiang Chen's current strength was not enough to fully exert the power of the Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool, but after this was struck, the demonic devil would surely suffer severe injuries. Jiang Chen then had to grab this opportunity to edify it, accomplishing his task.

Hong Hong.....

The instant the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd emerged, it let out waves of roars that looked like a tsunami. The energy inside his Qi Sea was frenziedly being channelled to the halberd.

After obtaining a massive amount of energy, the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd emitted an incomparably brilliant light and an even stronger Qi.

Finally, every bit of energy in his Qi Sea was drained away. His face paled, and couldn't help cursing in his heart. The price of launching this attack surely wasn't small, but since he had decided to use it, he had to rely on it.

Roar.....

Roars were heard from the halberd once more, making Jiang Chen look like a peerless war god. He lunged the golden Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd forward, charging at the incoming attack like an unparalleled frenzied dragon.

After this strike, he immediately kept the halberd and began devouring large amount of Immortal Meta Stones. A large portion of his energy had been expended and he needed to recover fast.

Roar.....

The dragon aura raged, wreaking havoc at all things. The three Wheels of Evil were instantly destroyed by the frenzied dragons. The scene of the last wheel being devoured by the frenzied dragon

was frightening.

After the destruction of the three wheels, the momentum of the frenzied dragon didn't reduce. It continued launching at the demonic chief.

“What?”

His facial expression changed dramatically and for the first time, it felt fear.

Chapter 1231 – The Crisis in Fragrant Sky City

The demonic chief felt a pang of fear for the first time from the inexhaustible Qi of destruction coming from the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. It was the Qi of death. He felt that even if he expended all of his energy to block this attack, he could never resist it.

Roar.....

The demonic leader roared frenziedly then turned around, attempting to escape, but his Qi had already been locked by the halberd. It was too late for him flee now. Under such a helpless circumstance, his only option was to confront it, but after launching the Wheel of Evil, he wouldn't be able to launch an attack that was as powerful in such a short period of time. Taking his fear into account, his attack would certainly be weak and ineffective.

Hong Long.....

The destructive force of the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd was so strong it instantly crumbled the devil's counterattack, and then striking heavily on his body.

“Argh.....”

The demonic chief let out a miserable cry before falling to the ground from above. He spurted out a mouthful of blood that looked striking in the night. As a matter of fact, this happened because Jiang Chen held back in his attack, or else, the devil would be killed on the spot. Even if he wasn't killed, he would surely be injured severely.

“Edifying Light.”

Jiang Chen spoke gently and struck out the Edifying Light. The Buddha light moved like a soul serpent, penetrating the darkness

and entering the devil's head. Jiang Chen seemed weaker after it was done. Casting the Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool had drained too much of his energy. Fortunately, he was able to edify the demonic chief at the right time, otherwise, he would fall into an incomparably dangerous state.

“Argh.....”

A shrill cry was heard from the devil, while wrestling hard with the edifying light. Despite the huge suppression effect that the edifying light had on his ability, if he was at his peak state, perhaps he would be able to contain the light and force it out of his body. Now that the edifying light had gone into his body, everything had become too late.

In fact, the demonic chief only had himself to blame for this incident. If he allowed the other Divine Immortal experts to come along with him, Jiang Chen wouldn't have dared to use the Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool, because he knew that his other opponents would attack him as soon as he had fallen into a vulnerable state.

The devil's resistance lasted for a minute before succumbing to the light. He came to Jiang Chen's side, trembling, then bowed to Jiang Chen. “Master.”

The wounds on the demonic chief's body were quite serious and still spewing out blood. If it wasn't because of his strong physique, he would have already fainted by now.

Jiang Chen led the demonic chief away to another thousand miles, flying out of the territory of the Evil Clan, arriving at the borderline of another territory. He then randomly picked a secluded place and began restoring his energy.

In the course of his recuperation, the demonic chief just stood guard over him, completely disregarding his own injuries. After being subdued by the edifying light, he had become Jiang Chen's slave. He would have to listen to every one of his master's

command unless Jiang Chen personally helped him remove the edifying light from his body. And there was only one master in his heart – Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's pupil glittered and his momentum was vigorous. He darted the chief a glance. The top priority right now was to help this devil recover fast. Later, when they returned to Fragrant Sky City, this devil would become his greatest aid. This devil alone was enough to allow Jiang Chen to move across the 36 cities in the outer region unhindered.

“Chief, I will now help you heal your wounds.” Said Jiang Chen.

“Thank you master.”

The demonic chief didn't dare show any sign of neglect. He deeply saluted Jiang Chen once more. In his eyes, Jiang Chen was the only one, the sacred and inviolable figure; what Jiang Chen would say was the absolute decree that couldn't be opposed. Even if Jiang Chen ordered him to kill himself in front of him, he would never have the slightest hesitation.

Jiang Chen casted out a massive wood spirit that flowed into the devil's body like tidal waves. The devil shuddered as he felt a revitalizing sensation. He could feel his wounds being healed rapidly. Such healing effect was even better than those mystical pills. It astounded him and increased his reverence for his master.

“Go into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda now. We will head back to Fragrant Sky City. I will continue to treat your injuries along the way.”

Said Jiang Chen, then, he opened the huge door of the pagoda. On his way back to Fragrant Sky City, he would need to pass by the areas where other human experts lived. If they detected a demonic devil, it would certainly bring him lots of trouble. Therefore, it would be safer if the devil stayed inside the pagoda.

“Yes, master.”

The demonic chief vanished into the pagoda in a flash. As Jiang Chen was connected to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, even if the demonic devil was inside the pagoda, Jiang Chen could still treat the devil's injuries at any time.

He flew towards the direction where he came from, at rapid speed. More than one day had passed since he departed from Fragrant Sky City. Adding this return trip, it took him almost two days for the entire trip. He was still clueless if the three city lords launched an attack to Fragrant Sky City. The worst case scenario was that the three city lords had already started attacking his city, but he believed that Big Yellow would be able to hold the Five Elemental Tisura Grand Formation until he returned.

As soon as he return, it would be the time for a massacre. There wouldn't be peaceful days anymore in the outer region.

The current situation of Fragrant Sky City was just as Jiang Chen expected. It had completely fallen into a chaotic state and was at the brink of crisis. Not long after Jiang Chen left the city, the three city lords launched their attack. There weren't only three of them, but also many other early Divine Immortal experts.

Hong Long.....

The Heaven and Earth shook. Those Divine Immortal experts launched their most ferocious attack, bombarding the Five Elemental Tisura Formation and producing cracking sounds, seeming to break at any second. Plenty of buildings outside the prefecture were already destroyed.

The Divine Immortal experts continued to launch their unceasing attacks and the formation wouldn't seem to be able to hold much longer. Big Yellow was losing his strength as he was the only one who was supporting the formation.

"Dammit! These humans sure are aggressive. It would be nice if the monk is here. With the help of his stone monument, the formation wouldn't have any problem holding for seven days

straight.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but scolded. This had prompted him to think of Tyrant, particularly, during the time when they were defending Nebula Sect against Nan Bei Chao's forces. At that time, Tyrant's stone monument had contributed a lot in stabilizing and sustaining the formation.

Chapter 1232 – Time is Running Out

At this point, the Five Elemental Tisura Formation wouldn't be able to hold for too long. Big Yellow, Ah Da, Ah Er, Chen Hui and Li Si had all tried their best to support the grand formation by channelling their energy into it. Even Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying and many experts in the prefecture had joined them. Although they had limited strength, every one of them wanted to contribute as much as they could. If the grand formation was broken, they would surely end up pretty bad.

Both Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying knew those three city lords more than any one of them. Some said birds of a feather flock together. Those who befriended the Lascivious Young Master wouldn't be very different from him. Given their beautiful appearance, the consequences of falling into their hands wouldn't be very much different from Lascivious Young Master's grip.

Outside the grand formation, at least a dozen of Divine Immortal experts were constantly launching their attacks under the lead of the three Divine Immortal city lords. Their attack power could never be underestimated.

As a matter of fact, Big Yellow and the others were having difficulties sustaining the grand formation while the three city lords were also feeling depressed. Each and every one of them began to curse as they had been attacking the formation for more than a day and not even a crack was seen on the barrier. Such a situation certainly dealt them a significant blow to their morale.

“Motherf*cker! What kind of formation is this? How could it be this solid? I couldn't see any capable experts inside the formation except for that dog, which was only a late Heaven Immortal expert. Despite the insuperable gap in power, this dog is actually able to support this formation for so long. It seems like the one who deployed this formation must be some extraordinary being.”

“Why hasn’t Jiang Chen appeared yet? Brother Lascivious died because of him. Could he be too scared to come out?”

“Don’t care that much. He won’t be able to hide for long. Today, we must break this formation. They are losing their ability to sustain it. If words about today’s incident is spread out, it will deal a huge blow to the prestige of the outer region.”

The three city lords gritted their teeth. After making clear of Jiang Chen’s actual situation, they advanced to Fragrant Sky City. Initially, they all thought that seizing control of the city was merely a simple task. None of them had expected to face such a massive obstacle. They had already spent a day attacking with all their might, but their enemy’s grand formation was yet to be broken, let alone killing anyone inside.

By this time, both sides were giving out their best, especially those three city lords. They were constantly yelling at their men to increase their force of attack, because to them, it was already a great disgrace not being able to break a formation after such a long period of time.

The incident about Fragrant Sky City had stirred up numerous experts across the outer region. Perhaps, there were some other cities that were paying attention to this matter in the dark. Such a situation made them lose their face. If they didn’t break the grand formation as soon as possible and kill everyone inside, they would later become the object of ridicule, a laughing stock, and even be bullied by the others when they returned.

The Evil Abyss has always been a cruel world. The weak would always be bullied and the strong would have the authority all the time. Every strong expert would have to step on other people’s shoulder or corpse in order stay at the top.

Hong Long.....

Resplendent attacks drifted over the sky. Every attack would leave cracks on the grand formation, making Big Yellow extremely

busy in repairing those damages. However, the frequency of the attacks were starting to exceed his repairing speed, causing more cracks to appear on the formation. It seemed like they wouldn't be able to hold on for long.

“What should we do now? The grand formation won't be able to last long. I wonder when Young Master Jiang will be back.” Huang Ying said with concern.

“Don't worry. Big Brother Jiang will definitely be back.”

Said Yan Qingcheng with an irreplaceable confidence she had for Jiang Chen.

“Big Yellow, how long can we continue to hold?”

Chen Hui asked while gritting his teeth. Holding the Five Elemental Tisura Grand Formation was just too taxing. A large portion of his energy had already been consumed.

“We can still last for another two hours.”

Said Big Yellow. He didn't want to lie to them. Two hours was the absolute limit for what he could do now. If he was replaced by an expert who had no knowledge in formation, that expert would only be able to hold it for ten minutes, let alone two hours.

“Two hours? Will the City Lord be back before that time? If he can't all of us will be finished.”

Said Li Si worriedly. The attacks from the other side were too overwhelming, leaving him no sign of hope.

“Shut your mouth, you two bastards! Little Chen will be back before that time.”

Big Yellow said impatiently. Obviously, the two of them were the ones who were scared of death. This could be observed when they chose to submit to Jiang Chen. However, Big Yellow wasn't afraid that these two would betray them. Despite their greed and fear for dying, they were also beings with intelligence. They should have

already seen the situation clearly. Those three city lords weren't going to let any of them live. Even if they choose to surrender now, they would only face one outcome – death.

Moreover, Chen Hui and Li Si were completely frightened by Jiang Chen. Before they could confirm if Jiang Chen was able to return, they wouldn't dare to do anything that was unfavourable to Jiang Chen, or else they would die very badly.

Having no other choices, the two of them could only continue to instil their energy into the grand formation, assisting Big Yellow to hold the grand formation.

There was nothing to be said about Ah Da and Ah Er. After being edified by Jiang Chen, the only mission in their lives was to serve Jiang Chen. They would use their lives to complete the task given by Jiang Chen if they had to. This was the difference between them and Chen Hui and Li Si.

One hour passed. Innumerable cracks had become visible on the Grand Formation, seemingly about to break at any time, but with Big Yellow's brilliant skill, the formation could still hold. This scene made the three city lords even more depressed. While they were astonished by Big Yellow's terrifying skill, they also had the urge to shred him to pieces right away.

“Son of a b*tch! That dog is truly a strong one. Everyone, give out all your best. This formation is already reaching its end.”

One of the city lords was shouting while launching aggressive attacks.

Hong Long.....

The Heaven and Earth trembled. The winds and clouds changed colour. The entire sky above Fragrant Sky City was encompassed by a colourful energy and the Qi of death.

On the other side, Jiang Chen had increased his speed to the maximum. By circulating the Great Divination Art, he had already

predicted some of the situations in Fragrant Sky City. In the pagoda, the demonic chief's wounds had already been fully healed. As such, what he needed to do now was to get back to Fragrant Sky City as soon as possible.

Chapter 1233 – The Mighty Return

“It seems like I have fly faster.”

Jiang Chen’s expression turned grim. The Flaming Wings sprouted behind his back. He had already calculated the Qi of danger using the Great Divination Art. At the present moment, Fragrant Sky City had to be in a critical condition. If he couldn’t hurry back on time, something bad would certainly happen.

This was the Evil Abyss. A place that was fundamentally different from the outside world and conscience does not exist here. He was almost certain that once the Five Elemental Tisura Grand Formation was broken, no one in the prefecture would live. This had been the norm in Evil Abyss.

Back in Fragrant Sky City, Big Yellow’s head was already full of sweat. He was constantly moving around to different positions to repair the cracks. Even so, the cracks were getting more and more and increasingly bigger. If he was replaced by another person to take care of this situation, the formation would’ve been broken completely by now, but this didn’t mean that Big Yellow would be able to hold on any longer.

At this present moment, it wasn’t only Big Yellow who had almost exhausted his energy, but also Ah Da, Ah Er and all the other experts who had joined to support the formation. If the situation continued at this rate, their death would be inevitable as not much strength was left inside of them to fight a battle.

Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying’s face paled. Their bodies were shivering. Due to their weaker cultivation base, they could no longer support the formation. At this point in time, plenty of experts in the prefecture began to despair. Their only hope was to see Jiang Chen emerge on time, he was their only hope.

More than half an hour later, the grand formation finally lost its defensive capability. The cracks and damages on the surface of the

formation intensified.

Outside the formation, under the leadership of the three mid Divine Immortal experts, a dozen Divine Immortal experts launched another joint strike. Each and every one of them was furious. Their eyes were brimming with dense killing intent. It would be abnormal if none of them was infuriated after such long hours of pounding the barrier.

“Everybody, give out all of your strength now. They won’t be able to hold it this time. Let’s break their grand formation once and for all!” one of the city lords shouted.

Shouting...

Every one of the experts burst out yelling. Each launched their full-force attack, determined to get rid of this hateful grand formation.

Hong Long...

Raging energy poured down like a storm, landing heavily at the center of the formation. It radiated a startling aura that was akin to the Nine Heavens Lightning.

Ka Cha...

After nearly two days of constant struggling, the Five Elemental Tisura Grand Formation finally broke apart under the enemy’s aggressive attacks.

“Barf...”

The fragmentation of the grand formation had dealt everyone who supported it a huge blow. All of them spurted out a mouthful of blood and their Qis were reduced drastically. Many of them were sent flying, smashing heavily against the ground. Some of them even created a crater on the ground.

In fact, even the incredibly strong Big Yellow wasn’t excluded from this event. The current him had consumed too much of his

energy. The corner of his mouth and eyes were bloody. But because of his powerful Divine Beast Bloodline, he was able to prevent himself from falling despite the severe injuries.

However, being the core support of the Five Elemental Tisura Grand Formation, he naturally was the one who received the largest backlash. Presently, he had lost all of his combat strength and any early Divine Immortal expert was enough to finish him off.

“Motherf*cker! City Lord hasn’t returned yet until now! Everything is over!”

Chen Hui couldn’t help but curse. He placed his hand on top of his chest and stood up forcefully. The tremendous consumption plus the backlash of the formation had brought them a huge impact. Despite being Divine Immortal experts, not much strength was left inside of them.

Despair. Numerous of them were in despair!

Above Fragrant Sky City, every one of the experts of the three cities were staring below with ferocious and disdainful eyes. At this time, they felt that they could finally express their anger. The best way to express their fury on these people was not through killing but in torturing them, killing them would never bring as much pleasure as torturing them to death.

The three city lords fixed their gazes on Big Yellow at the same time. Despite the grand formation having been broken and their hostile relationship, they couldn’t help but raise their thumbs up for this dog to express their admiration.

“Where’s Jiang Chen? Ask him out now!” one of the city lords spoke coldly.

“Don’t worry. He will be here soon. However, it will also be the time of your death the moment he arrives,” said Big Yellow, shaking his tail.

There wasn't a single ounce of fear displayed on his face. Regardless of whether the others had confidence on Jiang Chen or not, Jiang Chen was a miracle to him. He always believed that Jiang Chen would emerge at the very last moment. This fact was already proven from all their past battles and crisis.

Furthermore, Jiang Chen had already mastered the Great Divination Art, the art that could predict future. So it was impossible that he couldn't predict the crisis in Fragrant Sky City.

"City Lord, this dog is too arrogant. In my opinion, that Jiang Chen must have fled because of fear. We don't have to waste our time waiting for him anymore. Let's get rid of all these people, especially this dog. We must torture him as much as we can. The reputation of the three cities has been ruined because of this dog."

"That's right. We must not let him die too easily. We have to slowly torture him to death as only that can dispel our grudges and hatred."

"Flay this dog, then suck his blood essence dry. I can see that this dog has a very vigorous blood and Qi. He must be some kind of extraordinary demonic beast. If we could absorb his blood essence, perhaps we will be able to obtain some benefits."

.....

The three city lords spoke with ridicule. They had already sentenced Big Yellow to death as they couldn't think of a reason why this dog shouldn't be killed. Despite so many experts besieging the city, this dog had wasted their two days by using only a single formation. This incident alone had severely ruined their name. Therefore, it was a must for them to torture this dog properly.

As for Jiang Chen, many had already brushed the thought of killing him aside. They all thought that Jiang Chen must have already fled for his life before they came.

“Very well. I will capture this dog, then properly torture him. There are also two pleasant beauties below. We are going to have lots of fun together.”

A city lord smiled malevolently. They had already noticed Huang Ying and Yan Qingcheng from the very beginning. Beauties like them were a fatal attraction to them.

Hong...

The city lord acted decisively, launching out a big palm all of a sudden towards Big Yellow.

Just as the big palm was about to reach Big Yellow’s head, a ray of brilliant sword light suddenly descended from the sky and landed on the big palm unbiasedly, cutting the palm into half.

Chapter 1234 – There are No Rules except Life and Death

“Who is it?”

The city lord’s face changed dramatically. He clamoured at the sky. Anyone that was capable of shattering his attack so casually must be a powerful expert that should at least be on par with his cultivation. Could it be that their advances on Fragrant Sky City had attracted other experts?

“Kaka... You think that with just all of you can flay Master Dog off? It should be me who will flay you all off. Jiang Chen has returned and today will be the end of your lives.”

Big Yellow burst into laughter. He already knew that it was Jiang Chen based on the sword light that contained the aura of the Heavenly Saint Sword. The fact that this attack could shatter the attack of a mid Divine Immortal opponent indicated that Jiang Chen had made another advancement in his cultivation.

All the worries in his heart were instantly erased when he found out that Jiang Chen was back. Turning around the desperate situation was always something Jiang Chen was adept at.

From a distance, a stream of blood-red light was moving at a speed faster than a shooting star, leaving numerous afterimages behind it. In a twinkle, it appeared not far away from the enemy forces. The being looked like a half human, half dragon. The majestic aura radiating from his sturdy body made everyone shiver, that was the unique aura of superiority, the aura of a true conqueror that not everyone had.

“It’s Big Brother Jiang!”

Yan Qingcheng was feeling incomparably happy. She knew that Jiang Chen would certainly appear at the last minute. It wasn’t his first time showing this kind of stimulating entrance. Every time,

he would be able to bring new hope to their despairing minds. Although she had already experienced it for a few times, she still felt excited and surprised by it. You would never lack the sense of security by following this man.

“City Lord is back. Truly amazing, in just two days time, City Lord has already advanced to the mid Heaven Immortal realm. I have never seen such a scary speed of advancement.”

“That’s right. I remember that City Lord was still an early Heaven Immortal expert two days ago, but he was already capable of killing Lascivious Young Master at that time. Now that he has advanced to the mid Heaven Immortal realm, those mid Divine Immortal experts won’t be a match for him. It seems like from now on, the outer region of Evil Abyss will never have its peace anymore.”

Chen Hui and Li Si couldn’t keep their calm when they saw the emergence of Jiang Chen at this critical moment. Despite of the countless geniuses that they had seen, it was their first time seeing a genius that was as rare as Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen’s improvement in power had allowed them to see a glimmer of hope. If those three city lords were killed by Jiang Chen today, the outer region would lose its serenity.

Jiang Chen’s eyes were as sharp as blade. His gaze fell on the bunch of experts. Perhaps, he could get rid of all of them without the help of the demonic chief.

When he saw Big Yellow and the others’ condition, he couldn’t help but sigh in relief. If he was late by another minute, the consequences would be unimaginable. If he didn’t appear on time to destroy that attack, Big Yellow wouldn’t be able to resist it.

“The person that you all are looking for has come,” said Jiang Chen coldly.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

That city lord seemed slightly surprised, he didn't think that Jiang Chen would be this young. Despite Jiang Chen's beast-like appearance, he was still able to see that Jiang Chen was an incomparably young genius. What shocked them the most was that this young man was merely a Heaven Immortal expert.

"I am."

The Heavenly Saint Sword in Jiang Chen's hand emitted brilliance and boundless killing intent, ready to slaughter these Divine Immortal experts at any second.

"A mere mid Heaven Immortal expert? We won't ever put you in our eyes. Don't waste time conversing with him. Let's kill him right away."

Another city lord spoke. Murderous intent already lingered around his body. This only showed that anyone who could establish a foothold in Evil Abyss was extremely violent and wicked.

"Alright, let's attack together."

The third city lord agreed. Although they weren't afraid of a mid Heaven Immortal expert, the fact remained that Lascivious Young Master was killed by this abnormal young man. Therefore, none of them dared to show any neglect. They might not have the courage to fight Jiang Chen on their own, but a three versus one battle gave them the audacity they needed.

"Whatever you try to do is pointless," said Jiang Chen in an incomparably cold tone.

In Evil Abyss, there were no rules that could be talked about. Killing someone had always been a simple incident and matter.

"Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal."

Jiang Chen started the attack first. For an instant, the sky was shaken by dragon roars. Nearly a dozen sturdy dragons emerged, hovering in the sky above the city. It looked as if true divine

dragons were descending from the sky. Such an aura was incomparably frightening to most people. Even in the Immortal World, everyone knew that dragons were legendary existences, they were noble creatures revered by countless people and they existed only in myths.

The three city lords however weren't alarmed by the dragons. Although they had never seen real dragons before, they had often seen combat skills that were similar to this type.

“Attack!”

When they sensed the unstoppable momentum of Jiang Chen, their faces turned grim, they immediately summoned their combat weapons, instilling all of their energy into the weapons, and then lunged at Jiang Chen.

Roar... Roar...

The dragon roars were overwhelming. The three city lords had underestimated the power of the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. Besides its varying colour, they also varied in combat strength. When the five elements were combined together, they mutually reinforced and neutralized each other.

The three of them launched their full-force attack, but it was still incomparably hard to fully block this attack. The current Jiang Chen wasn't the same as the previous Jiang Chen after all. With 560 000 dragon marks and with the help of the Great Divination Art, he was capable enough to kill mid Divine Immortal experts.

Howl!

The Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal didn't stop after the impact. The dragon had integrated itself with the sword, charging into the enemy. A dozen heavenly dragons had surrounded the three city lords while the dragon sword aimed at one of them. Although the three of them seemed like friends on the surface, they never had any experience working together. Now that the

dragons had broken their line of defence, their formation were disorientated. Instead of caring for the others, they cared only for themselves.

The dragon sword was moving too fast and its power was domineering. Combining it with the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal made it an invincible attack. The city lord that was being targeted by the Heavenly Saint Sword changed his facial expression immediately, he could already sense a strong Qi of death.

“No.....”

The city lord let out a miserable cry. While he was resisting the attack of the combat dragons, his eyes were watching helplessly as the dragon sword got closer and closer to his glabella.

Chapter 1235 – Conquering

Pu Chi!

There was no resistance, under Jiang Chen's fierce bombardment all resistance were futile. The dragon sword was too sharp. None of the energy was able to stop it. The targeted city lord's glabella was penetrated by the Heavenly Saint Sword. Blood spewed out uncontrollably from it. This resulted in a mid Divine Immortal expert's unnatural death.

“What!?”

The other two city lords exclaimed immediately when they saw the situation. They widened their eyes, they couldn't believe what they saw. They were very confident in their strength. Being the high and mighty mid Divine Immortal experts, they had never feared anything, but today, a mid Heaven Immortal genius had opened their eyes completely.

The death of their companion was like a wet blanket to them, making them aware of the current situation; at the same time, it also told them how foolish it was to attack Fragrant Sky City.

Escape. That was right. Escape was the only thing they could think of right now, because nothing was more valuable than life. It didn't matter if they lose a city. In Evil Abyss, life was priceless and it couldn't be brought back if it was gone.

Even though it's still a two versus one battle, after witnessing Jiang Chen's ferociousness, they immediately decided to run. They weren't idiots. They could naturally notice the difference between them and Jiang Chen. If they continued fighting, they would undoubtedly end up like the previous city lord.

Roar...

The roars of the frenzied dragons were deafening. It was impossible to escape the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. The

only way for them to leave was to break past the attacks of the combat dragons. Aside from the difficulty of doing so, Jiang Chen had never given any of them the chance to flee.

Howl!

The Heavenly Saint Sword howled once more, appearing before one of them in a blink. That person scrambled to defend. There was no way that he could be a match for Jiang Chen and every defence they used was fragile and vulnerable before the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Pu Chi!

Similarly, it was the sword that took his life. It penetrated through the chest of the city lord with such destructive power that it instantly destroyed all the vital force of the man.

Roar.....

The combat dragons hadn't completely disappeared. The remainder of them entered the Heavenly Saint Sword. In a flash, the tip of the sword was just an inch away from the last city lord's throat. It would only take a slight push to take his life.

"Don't, don't kill me."

The remaining city lord panicked. He didn't want to die. Despite already knowing the norm in Evil Abyss, he still begged for mercy and wanted a chance to live. It was basically impossible for him to escape from this youth even if he was at his peak.

"I can choose not to kill you. Let go of your divine sense and become my slave from now on," said Jiang Chen.

"What!?"

The city lord exclaimed. His face turned pale instantly. This indicated that Jiang Chen wanted to plant a seed in his Sea of Consciousness. From then on, he would become a slave that would only serve one master. Every thought in his mind would be known

by his master, and his master's single will could take his life.

To a mid Divine Immortal expert, it was incomparably cruel as he would lose all of his freedom from that point onwards. But given his current situation, this was the only chance for him to stay alive.

"I don't want to give you too much time. If you are unwilling to, you can die now," said Jiang Chen in a cold tone.

He would never be polite to people like this. The Heavenly Saint Sword was glimmering with sword light, ready to kill its target at any time.

The city lord gritted his teeth. In order to live, he was left with no other choice.

"I'll comply."

After that the city lord opened up his Sea of Consciousness. Jiang Chen created a seed made of divine sense and planted it in his opponent's mind, gaining full control of him.

"Master."

The city lord didn't dare show any sign of neglect and stubbornness because Jiang Chen was clearly aware of everything running in his mind.

"Very good. What's your name?" Jiang Chen asked.

This man was one of the city lords in the outer region. Thus, he must have a better understanding of the situation in the outer region. Having someone like him as a follower would benefit Jiang Chen greatly in his future plans in the Evil Abyss.

"Master, my name is Lu Sheng." Lu Sheng spoke out his name straightforwardly.

Jiang Chen had killed the other two mid Divine Immortal experts with astounding means and turned the one who surrendered to his slave. This scene shocked the experts of both sides. The

irreversible situation was instantly turned around by Jiang Chen, from defeat to victory.

“My God! Young Master Jiang has just left for two days. How could he become so powerful all of a sudden? He was able to kill mid Divine Immortal experts without relying on the two Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bulls.”

Huang Ying was completely influenced by Jiang Chen. His timely appearance made her see hope again.

“He’s too scary. It seems like we should follow City Lord wholeheartedly from now on.”

“Agreed. I can already imagine the Evil Abyss becoming chaotic because of City Lord, the outer region in particular. The remaining city lords in this region won’t be able to have a good night’s sleep.”

Chen Hui and Li Si were both completely overwhelmed by Jiang Chen. Before this, they still had complaints about Jiang Chen, but now, they had brushed off all their complaints and decided to follow their master, just like a loyal soldier to his country.

On the other side, those early Divine Immortal experts who came with their city lords to attack Fragrant Sky City seemed incomparably awkward. Apart from awkwardness, their eyes were also brimming with fear. They found it hard to accept everything that happened just now, it was just too different from what they had imagined. It was something that they hadn’t even dreamt about at night.

“Lu Sheng, I will leave these people to you. After you are done, see me at the prefecture.”

Jiang Chen left after issuing a command, then he flew towards the prefecture. He had already turned back to his human form. Judging from his appearance, it was very hard to link him to the killing demon.

After Jiang Chen left, the city lord immediately displayed the

dignity he used to have. Although he was a slave of Jiang Chen now, he was still the high and mighty city lord in front of these people and there were a some of them who were his subordinates.

“Listen up, people. I, Lu Sheng, have already surrendered to master. All of you will be given the chance to do so too. Anyone who refuses will die immediately,” said Lu Sheng sternly.

Chapter 1236 – Boundless of Benefits

As soon as Lu Sheng's voice dropped, those early Divine Immortal experts made their choice. All of them agreed to accept Jiang Chen as their master. Such result was considered a very good outcome to them. They knew very clearly that they were going to be a follower of someone anyway. Last time, they were Lu Sheng's slaves, but now Lu Sheng had become someone else's slave. Therefore, they had no reason to refuse it.

Besides, refusal was equivalent to death. None of them wanted death. It was all because of their good luck if they could live after they lost and they had to cherish this rare luck.

Furthermore, they weren't fools. They had already seen Jiang Chen's potential clearly in today's battle. Despite being a mid Heaven Immortal expert, he was able to kill mid Divine Immortal experts. Plus, his ruthlessness and decisiveness indicated that he was best suited to live in Evil Abyss and his future achievements would be limitless.

Jiang Chen had seized control of four cities in the outer region today, which was something that had never occurred before. Moreover, with his mentality, he would never stop at this point. That was to say, these four cities were just the beginning of his hegemonic journey.

Under his command, the four cities had been integrated. All four cities were now called Fragrant Sky City. It seemed all the other cities would also be named Fragrant Sky City soon. Jiang Chen did not want to be a ruler of only a single city, but the lord of the entire outer region.

In the prefecture, Jiang Chen was sitting on the seat of honour with Big Yellow and Yan Qingcheng on his sides. Huang Ying, Ah Da, Ah Er, Chen Hui, Li Si and Lu Sheng and all the other early Divine Immortal experts were present in the hall. All of them had

become Jiang Chen's underlings. Besides the two dead city lords, almost all the strength of the higher ups of the four cities were gathered here. Of course, there were also a few other stronger cities that were guarded with mighty Divine Immortal experts that weren't easy to deal with.

"Congratulations City Lord on conquering the four cities in the outer region. Such event is unprecedented in the history of outer region."

Li Si was trying to show off his flattering remark.

"What's so good about four cities? Given City Lord's strength and talent, I believe it won't be very long before City Lord dominates the entire outer region."

Chen Hui's remark might not be as flattering as Li Si, but what he said impressed his counterpart.

"Little Chen, it seems you have gotten tremendous benefits from your trip. You have advanced to mid Heaven Immortal realm," said Big Yellow.

"That's right. I have gotten quite a lot of benefits. I surely will reward the few of you for guarding Fragrant Sky City. First, I will have to heal your injuries," said Jiang Chen.

With a wave of his palm, tremendous wood spiritual Qi rushed out, filling the atmosphere inside the hall with Qi of vigour. Yan Qingcheng, Huang Ying, Big Yellow, Li Si, Chen Hui, Ah Da and Ah Er and the others were all enshrouded within the range of the wood spiritual Qi. All of them were absorbing these spiritual Qi hungrily. They could see the wounds mending itself at visible speed.

"That's a very strong spiritual Qi with such amazing healing effect."

It was Chen Hui and Li Si's first time coming into contact with the wood spiritual Qi. There was no way they could keep their

calm.

It wasn't just them who felt shocked, Lu Sheng and the others were also gawking at the air. None of them would ever believe this if they had not experienced it personally. They knew plenty of vulnerary holy pills and they also had some of them, but none of them had such magical healing effect.

In just about 10 minutes, everyone had recovered from all the injuries they had suffered from the formation backlash. Each and every one of them looked refreshed and as good as new. At this time, everyone changed the way they looked at Jiang Chen, especially Chen Hui and Li Si. The mood they had now was totally different from the time they chose to follow Lascivious Young Master. The only reason they followed Lascivious Young Master was to keep their lives and live better in the Evil Abyss, but as for now, their loyalty towards this new master had taken root in their hearts.

“As I said earlier, I'll reward those who have contributed and earned the credit. I will distribute a bit of the Spiritual Spring to each of you. After consuming it, you will all experience its good effect. Chen Hui, Li Si, both of you have already reached the peak of early Divine Immortal realm. With the help of the Spiritual Spring, it won't be a problem for you two to reach the mid Divine Immortal realm,” said Jiang Chen. He had lots of Spiritual Spring and he didn't mind giving out some of it.

He took out some of the Spiritual Spring and handed it to the two. The instant the Spiritual Spring appeared, everyone's eyes brightened up. They started looking at Jiang Chen's hands with widened eyes. They could feel the extraordinary features from this Spring. They could feel that it was a natural and true treasure.

“Ah, this is truly a treasure! The Spiritual Spring will have great impact to people's cultivation base. Given our current condition, after taking this liquid, we surely will advance to mid Divine Immortal realm. A thousand thanks to City Lord!”

Chen Hui received the Spiritual Spring and saluted Jiang Chen deeply. All remaining obstinacy in their hearts had disappeared, they had now become completely submissive after they received the reward. It was rare to find someone like Jiang Chen in Evil Abyss to have fairness in both punishment and reward. They couldn't believe that Jiang Chen was willing to share with them even the Spiritual Spring. If he was replaced by Lascivious Young Master, he certainly wouldn't share even half a drop of the spring. This was the main difference between the two leaders.

“Sister Ying, Qingcheng, the Spiritual Spring will have the greatest effect on both of you. Your current cultivation base is still low. If you absorb the liquid properly, you will be able to break through to the late Heaven Immortal realm or even to the half-step Divine Immortal realm,” said Jiang Chen.

The Spiritual Spring was a natural and holy item and worth more than a city. Otherwise, the two late Divine Immortal human experts wouldn't engaged in a deadly fight with the demonic devil.

“Thank you Young Master Jiang.”

Huang Ying could only express her thanks. Everyone who was present, including her, knew how valuable the Spiritual Spring was. There was no other option besides accepting this gift because it was necessary for her and Yan Qingcheng to advance as quickly as possible, or else they would become Jiang Chen's nuisance.

Ah Da and Ah Er had been obeying all Jiang Chen's commands, so naturally they would get a piece of the benefit. Both of the barbaric bulls were giggling at each other after obtaining their reward.

“Sh*t! Why aren't you giving Master Dog anything? Could it be Master Dog's contribution not big enough?”

Big Yellow snapped. Jiang Chen had given benefits to all the contributors in the previous battle, but Big Yellow was excluded from it. How could he possibly accept such unfair treatment since

he was the one who contributed the most?

“Why in such a hurry? I will give you something better later.”
Jiang Chen slapped the dog’s head.

Chapter 1237 – It's Just the Beginning

After listening to this, Big Yellow grinned and stood aside, keeping his silence. Since Jiang Chen said that he would receive a nice gift, it would definitely be more precious than the Spiritual Spring. This had filled him with anticipation.

Lu Sheng and his men could only feel jealous while seeing Jiang Chen distributing the Spiritual Spring to the others. Of course, none of them dared to speak as they were still enemies hours ago.

“As long as you people become an obedient follower of mine and contribute your best, naturally every one of you will be included in the To-Be-Rewarded list,” said Jiang Chen.

“Yes, City Lord.”

All the Divine Immortal experts replied simultaneously and respectfully. Now, they realised that although this youth was ruthless and violent, he was fair in punishment and rewards. Following someone like him would certainly bring them a lot of benefits; they would have more promising future than following any other city lord.

“Now, let's talk about the next plan. Fragrant Sky City has to prosper in Evil Abyss. These four cities will only be the beginning of our journey,” said Jiang Chen.

As the crisis had already been settled, with a late Divine Immortal demonic devil and the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd as trump cards, it was enough for him to establish a strong position in the outer region.

Lu Sheng perked up when he heard what Jiang Chen said. He knew that Jiang Chen would never stop here. He knew that someone like Jiang Chen would never be satisfied with where he was now. According to his estimation, it was only a matter of time before Jiang Chen's influence spread across to the middle and even

the inner region.

“Master. There is a total of 36 cities in the outer region. Naturally, we won’t put those ordinary cities in our eyes as we can just invade them at any time, making them a part of Fragrant Sky City, but there are four cities that aren’t easy to deal with. They are basically the core cities amongst the 36 cities. Every one of those cities has late Divine Immortal experts. Additionally, they also have connections with the big cities in the middle region because they have been paying tribute to them regularly. Given our present strength, I’m afraid that it would be a little hard to confront them,” said Lu Sheng.

“That’s right. Those four cities no doubt are strong. Almost all of the resources in the outer region are controlled by them. Normally, we as ordinary cities wouldn’t dare to offend them. Presently, the emergence of Fragrant Sky City had possibly already attracted their attention. If we continue to conquer the other cities, I’m afraid that those four cities won’t sit still anymore. In order to avoid further chaos, they will take action without hesitation. It’s true that they won’t interfere in a fight between two cities, but Fragrant Sky City is no longer one or two city. They will do everything they can to stop us from growing massively,” another person said.

Jiang Chen revealed a trace of smile after hearing this. If it was before, he would perhaps come to a halt and consider recuperating and secluding, so that he could increase his strength and the forces of his army, but now, none of that concerned him. It didn’t concern him at all even if there were late Divine Immortal experts. Now that he had arrived in Evil Abyss, he had to make sure he wouldn’t live too comfortably, or else all his time would be wasted.

He only have one objective in coming here – that was to improve his cultivation, because he could never do that in a peaceful environment.

Jiang Chen’s enemy was too powerful. It made him feel

boundless pressure all the time. Therefore, he had to improve himself whenever he got the chance. Nan Bei Chao was a good example. Currently, he didn't even know what Nan Bei Chao's true cultivation and where he was. He guessed that Nan Bei Chao must be stronger than anyone in One-Line-Sky. He estimated that the true Nan Bei Chao's cultivation had already exceeded the Immortal King realm, he might have reached the Immortal Emperor realm or even Immortal Venerable realm, which was beyond Jiang Chen's imagination.

Putting Nan Bei Chao aside, Tian Muyun was also hard to deal with. Although Tian Muyun was merely a half-step Immortal King expert, Jiang Chen knew that given Tian Muyun's talent, he was already equivalent to a true Immortal King expert.

As such, he must utilize his time in the Evil Abyss to improve his cultivation as much as he could. His target absolutely wasn't just the tiny forces in the outer region. His main target was the Evil Clan, the origin of the Evil Clan was too beneficial to him.

Of course, advancement was a step-by-step process, like how we eat rice. Jiang Chen's advancement was already considered heaven defying for reaching such a stage since his arrival in the Immortal World.

"There's no need to worry about them. Lu Sheng, issue a declaration of war to the neighbouring cities. They will have three days to surrender to me and agree to rename their city to 'Fragrant Sky City'. Otherwise, it will be their end."

Jiang Chen stood up from his seat, radiating a dense Qi of superiority that came straight from his bones. The blood that flowed in his veins right now was the noblest blood ever in the world and no one would dare to disobey him.

"Yes, master. I will do it right away."

Lu Sheng bowed to Jiang Chen; then led his people out of the main hall. Finally, the outer region was going to face chaos. Peace

would immediately be destroyed. A situation like this would stir people's fear and anticipation. They would be very proud if they were able to fight alongside Jiang Chen when he conquers the entire outer region.

"The few of you can leave now. Utilize the time to refine the Spiritual Spring to improve your cultivation and wait for the war three days later. Anyone who makes a huge contribution will be rewarded as well," said Jiang Chen to Chen Hui and the others.

"Thanks City Lord for nurturing us. We will certainly do our best and accept any risk."

Chen Hui's tone was resolute and firm. The passion inside his blood had been ignited due to Jiang Chen's arrival.

Chen Hui, Li Si, Ah Da and Ah Er left afterwards. After obtaining the Spiritual Spring, they were desperate to refine them now. Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying had also walked out of the main hall. As both of their cultivation was the weakest, the Spiritual Spring had a greater effect on them. Not only could it improve their cultivation, but also their physique. This wasn't something that any ordinary pill could do.

After everyone left, Big Yellow approached and asked impatiently: "Quickly take out the good stuff for Master Dog."

Big Yellow couldn't wait to see what Jiang Chen had brought him.

Jiang Chen turned his palm and the soul essence of the demonic devil appeared. Big Yellow's eyes were glittering while he's drooling.

"This is left by a Golden Immortal expert. How did you get it?" Big Yellow asked.

"Not bad. This is the soul essence left by an early Golden Immortal demonic devil of Evil Clan. I got it by accident while it was being nurtured in the Spiritual Spring. I have already refined a

little of it and have achieved an advancement. I will give the rest of it to you. I estimate that this is going to benefit you even more.” Jiang Chen then passed the soul essence to Big Yellow.

Chapter 1238 – The Chaos in the Outer Region

Jiang Chen had already thought of his decision thoroughly. Despite the preciousness of the soul essence, it couldn't bring the maximum benefit in a short period of time. The effect of the soul essence would only be maximized at the most critical time, which undoubtedly made Big Yellow the most suitable candidate.

First, both Big Yellow and Jiang Chen were sworn brothers and they made no distinction between what one owns. Otherwise, Jiang Chen would never give such an important treasure to him. Furthermore, Big Yellow possessed the powerful Divine Beast Bloodline. His physique was far better than any ordinary demonic beast. If he could fully refine the soul essence, Jiang Chen was afraid that Big Yellow's cultivation would break into the early Divine Immortal realm.

Once he reached this stage, his combat strength would skyrocket like crazy. By that time, he would even be capable enough to fight an ordinary Divine Immortal opponent.

“Wahaha! You sure are cool! This thing has too much benefits to Master Dog! However, do you still have the Spiritual Spring, that looks very tasty.”

Big Yellow was beaming with joy after receiving the soul essence, but he couldn't let that Spiritual Spring go.

“You can have as much as you want.”

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes, then took out some of it. He felt speechless about this dog as he couldn't imagine how Big Yellow would describe something like the Spiritual Spring as tasty, but he did know that Big Yellow had a humongous appetite.

“Ah, this is a lot. Did you go to the territory of the Evil Clan?” asked Big Yellow.

“Of course, and I have gotten quite a lot of benefits in that trip. The demonic devils of the Evil Clan are exactly the nourishment needed to improve my cultivation. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda has already reached sixteenth level; as for me, I have reached the mid Heaven Immortal realm and edified the chief of one of the tribes of Evil Clan which is a late Divine Immortal demonic devil, and almost destroyed his tribe,” said Jiang Chen straightforwardly. There was nothing that he should hide in front of Big Yellow.

“This is great. With this soul essence, it won’t be a problem for me to advance to the early Divine Immortal realm. By that time, killing a mid Divine Immortal expert will be a piece of cake for me and I can even fight a late Divine Immortal expert. The Spiritual Spring you gave will also probably grant Ah Da, Ah Er, Chen Hui and Li Si a level of advancement. In this way, the overall strength of Fragrant Sky City is enough to conquer the entire outer region.”

Big Yellow’s pupils sparkled. He couldn’t help his excitement when he knew that he could finally accomplish some big things in Evil Abyss.

“That’s correct. Since we have come here, we should no longer stay low-profile. We have to achieve great things. We have to ensure that every city be named as Fragrant Sky City. Go into seclusion and refine the soul essence now. Three days later, we will start attacking the cities in the outer region,” said Jiang Chen.

It was conceivable that there wouldn’t be peace anymore in the outer region. It was doomed to have a reign of terror because of Jiang Chen’s presence. This was a place without kindness and moral. So there was no reason for Jiang Chen to have any scruples about his actions.

Fragrant Sky City might seem quiet, but the number of guards outside the city had been increased. Normally, only a few guards could be observed on the outside of the city, but the emergence of Fragrant Sky City had standardized everything. Jiang Chen and

the others had all gone into seclusion as they needed to boost the overall strength of their forces within three days.

After yielding to Jiang Chen, Lu Sheng didn't dare show the least bit of neglect. In these three days, he was issuing declaration letters continuously to different cities, asking them to surrender in three days' time. Apart from that, he also replaced the plaque of the other three cities with Fragrant Sky City's plaque.

For an instant, storm erupted across the entire outer region. Conversations about Fragrant Sky City could be heard everywhere. The name of Fragrant Sky City and Jiang Chen struck Evil Abyss so suddenly, like a wind that came from a hollow cave.

It was impossible to say that conquering four cities at a time wasn't an impactful matter, because the blow it sent was beyond anyone's imagination.

"Damn! What kind of ghost is that Jiang Chen? Does he want to conquer the entire outer region based on his sole strength? He has already hung the plaque of Fragrant Sky City on the front gate of all the four cities and has given us three days to surrender. This only showed that he totally isn't putting us in his eyes!"

"I heard that Jiang Chen is merely a Heaven Immortal expert but possesses the means and strength to kill Divine Immortal opponents. It's very hard to imagine the power of such a monstrous figure. Even if he joined those super large sect, he would surely be the best amongst the other geniuses. How can someone like him come to the Evil Abyss? Could he be a genius of some large sect coming here to train? This isn't right. Those super big sect in Ethereal Immortal Domain will never put their eyes on a place like this, as they already have their own places for their disciples to train."

"Who cares who he is? The dragon will have to coil up and the tiger will have to lie down the moment they arrive in Evil Abyss. This place isn't the same as outside. Killing people here is too

common. Ever since the Evil Lord took over half of the Evil Abyss, it has been divided into outer, middle and inner region, to maintain the balance. As such, it is impossible for this Jiang Chen to ruin the balance by dominating the whole outer region.”

“That’s right. That Jiang Chen is truly conceited. Even if he is capable enough to take us down, there are still the four super cities in this region and those cities have late Divine Immortal experts. Jiang Chen wouldn’t be able to deal with those cities. Plus, those cities also have the support of the big cities in the middle region. What Jiang Chen is doing is akin to seeking death.”

.....

All the others cities were arguing about Jiang Chen amongst each other, making Jiang Chen the common enemy of the whole outer region, however, the fact remained that Jiang Chen had given them a tremendous amount of pressure. Under such pressure, they had lost the peace in their hearts, they knew very well that anyone who came to Evil Abyss was ruthless and violent. The fact that Jiang Chen had taken over four cities in a row was enough to prove of his ferociousness and dominance.

Despite the three days’ warning, nobody surrendered, which was just as Jiang Chen expected. Anyone in Evil Abyss who became lord of the city was a ferocious figure that was very unlikely to yield to someone, because once the lord surrendered his power and himself willingly, it would bring a massive impact to his life. It would give him a hard time in his future path, and he would likely become a laughing stock to all.

Many cities had already begun joining forces with other city’s, preparing to defend against Jiang Chen’s power. More importantly, all the city lords thought that Jiang Chen was only bragging. Despite how much courage he got, he would never dare do so as these three regions were founded personally by the Evil Lord. If Jiang Chen disregarded this fact, it was akin to going against the Evil Lord. In the Evil Abyss, no matter how

presumptuous and arrogant one was, neither of them would ever dare make the Evil Lord their enemy.

Chapter 1239 – Attack the Cities and Seize the Lands (1)

The turbulent wind swept through the tower, heralding a rising storm in the mountains. This was the situation the outer region had fallen into. The atmosphere in various cities were tense. Every one of the experts was standing in their assigned position, combat-ready to face the attack of Fragrant Sky City. There were also some cities that didn't make any preparations or even allied with the other cities. It had to be said that the likes of these city lords did have a very optimistic view. They still firmly believed that Jiang Chen would never dare launch a large-scale attack in the outer region. Without a doubt, city lords with such optimistic beliefs were more arrogant than Jiang Chen.

Unfortunately, this bunch of people knew too little about Jiang Chen and his methods. Any one of them who had a certain understanding about Jiang Chen would've already made the smartest decision by surrendering to Fragrant Sky City, or else they were only going to face their death.

In Fragrant Sky City, all the experts who had went into seclusion had gone out three days later, except for Big Yellow. He was still refining the soul essence, a treasure left by a Golden Immortal demonic devil, it made his refinement harder than the others. Therefore, more time was needed to complete the refinement.

There was a huge square outside the prefecture. All the experts of Fragrant Sky City were standing opposite of Jiang Chen. Each and every one of them seemed incomparably stirred, especially Chen Hui and Li Si. There was no way that they wouldn't because their cultivation had already improved a lot after getting Jiang Chen's reward, advancing from the peak of early Divine Immortal realm to the mid Divine Immortal realm, which was something that they hadn't dared dream of.

One should now that every advancement in the Divine Immortal stage was incomparably difficult. Furthermore, the both of them had already touched the bottleneck of their cultivation realm, making it even harder for them to break through. Jiang Chen however easily helped them break past this barrier. So they now rejoiced the wise decision that they made early on.

Being mid Divine Immortal experts, it meant that they were now qualified to be lord of the city. Of course, that would only happen in the past. Now that Jiang Chen had come to Evil Abyss, mid Divine Immortal experts no longer had the ruling power. Even city lords like Lu Sheng had to surrender to Jiang Chen and become his slave, or else death would be his only option.

Not just them, Ah Da and Ah Er had also advanced to the mid Divine Immortal realm. The two of them possessed incredible devil nature just like the demonic devils of the Evil Clan. So, this made the Evil Abyss the ideal place for them to cultivate. Plus, both of their minds were interlinked, making their speed of advancement incredibly fast when they cultivate together. Therefore, after refining Jiang Chen's Spiritual Spring, they successfully advanced, reaching the mid Divine Immortal realm.

Jiang Chen was quite concerned for development of these two devils because they were different from those ordinary demonic devils. Their degree of cooperation was flawless. Now that they had advanced to the mid Divine Immortal realm, they were strong enough to fight a late Divine Immortal opponent. They were also one of Jiang Chen's most important source of strength at the present time.

Apart from them, Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying's cultivation had also improved by leaps and bounds, from early Heaven Immortal realm to the peak of late Heaven Immortal realm. Such speed really exhilarated them, Yan Qingcheng in particular. Her eyes were brimming with infatuation as she looked at Jiang Chen.

To the two girls, it was an incredibly lucky thing for them to

meet Jiang Chen in a place like Evil Abyss. There was no question about it. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen, they weren't sure what they would be facing right now. They would've probably been tortured and humiliated instead of achieving their current cultivation base.

Lu Sheng and the others were also very excited. Although they hadn't gotten anything from Jiang Chen yet, they were convinced by every one of their result. To those who wanted to survive well in Evil Abyss, there was nothing that they would anticipate more other than getting stronger.

So currently, all of them were filled with anticipation. As Jiang Chen had stated clearly, as long as they worked hard for him and contributed for the city, they naturally wouldn't be excluded from the reward-giving moment.

Roar...

Just as this moment, a thunderous roar sounded from the prefecture. Then all of a sudden, a golden pillar shot up to the sky. Big Yellow emerged in the sky. The current Big Yellow looked extremely divine and the illusion of a dragon-horse could be observed from his appearance.

"Good, Big Yellow has already advanced to the early Divine Immortal realm, which drastically increases our overall strength."

Jiang Chen couldn't help feeling delighted upon seeing Big Yellow's successful breakthrough to the early Divine Immortal realm. He knew Big Yellow's terror very well. Despite being merely an early Divine Immortal divine beast, if Big Yellow unleashed his divine power, it was a piece of cake for him to kill a mid Divine Immortal opponent. Plus, he was also capable of fighting even a late Divine Immortal opponent.

"It's so divine. Sure enough, this dog isn't as simple as he looks. In reality, his body possesses some very powerful bloodline."

"Our forces are getting stronger and stronger. With our present

strength, we are enough to sweep across the entire outer region unhindered.”

.....

Big Yellow’s advancement had brought the crowd’s morale to a new level. As every one of them on the scene were strong cultivators, they could naturally discern Big Yellow’s terrifying power. They had defended the prefecture alongside Big Yellow back when the three city lords came to attack them. So they knew very well how scary this dog was.

Lu Sheng and the others had an even deeper impression of Big Yellow. Although they hadn’t fought with Big Yellow yet, this dog was able to hold them for two days using only a grand formation. The memory of this was still as recent as yesterday’s.

After two consecutive advancement, the Qi radiating from Big Yellow shivered the soul of those mid Divine Immortal allies. They were afraid that none of them would have the courage to engage in a fight with Big Yellow.

Big Yellow flew one round to show off himself, then came to Jiang Chen’s side.

“Well done.”

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow’s head and praised.

“Tell me, when is the war starting?”

Big Yellow’s Qi fluctuated. He was losing control over his surging impulses.

“Master, three days have already passed, but not a single city lord has come to surrender. What should we do now?” asked Lu Sheng.

“What are the responses of those cities?” asked Jiang Chen.

As the present situation was within his calculation, there was nothing he should be surprised about.

“Master, your name and Fragrant Sky City had already been

spread out, but many cities have been forming alliances, seemingly in preparation to fight master. However, there were also a few of them that didn't do anything. They didn't join the others nor increased their defences as they have already concluded that master won't dare to launch a large-scale invasion in the outer region."

Lu Sheng briefly explained the status in the outer region. He wasn't idle during these past three days and he didn't dare to show any sign of neglect to the task given by Jiang Chen. Although no one came to surrender to them, he managed to gather intelligence from those cities.

"What the f*ck! How dare they for not putting us in their eyes? That's unforgivable. Tell Master Dog which cities are they from? Master Dog will personally launch a massacre in those cities, leaving no survivors," said Big Yellow angrily.

Chapter 1240 – Attack the Cities and Seize the Lands (2)

Big Yellow was feeling restless while Jiang Chen was revealing a cruel smile on his composed face. He understood very clearly why these people didn't put him in their eyes. It was precisely because of the Evil Lord. In their opinion, whatever he was doing now was directly opposing the Evil Lord.

However, this wasn't what Jiang Chen thought. He was intrigued by this Evil Lord, and even longed to meet this supreme lord, but with his current strength, it was apparently impossible for him to do so. A mighty Immortal King expert would never waste their time paying attention to a Heaven Immortal punk.

Therefore, he wanted to find ways to draw the Evil Lord's attention. Throwing the entire outer region into chaos was by far the best way to achieve this objective. Jiang Chen was a smart man. He knew what the Evil Lord wanted. He knew that the Evil Lord had longed to eliminate the Evil Clan and conquer this entire Evil Abyss.

Despite being a mighty Immortal King expert that had incredible means, it was virtually impossible for the Evil Lord to completely wipe the Evil Clan out, which was why the Evil Clan was still dominating half of the Evil Abyss even after Evil Lord's ten years of effort.

In order to fulfil his wish, he needed Jiang Chen's help. Only Jiang Chen could give him the opportunity to conquer the whole Evil Abyss. As for Jiang Chen, he would certainly be able to obtain humongous benefits by using the Evil Lord's strength.

Based on the calculation of the Great Divination Art, he and the Evil Lord wouldn't become enemies in the future, because the both of them needed each other. The Evil Lord would know about this sooner or later, which was why Jiang Chen had no scruples about

stirring the whole outer region.

“City Lord, what should we do now?” asked Chen Hui.

“Since we have already sent out the messages, we naturally have to do what we have promised. Since none of them is willing to surrender, we will then behead all of them,” said Jiang Chen plainly. He seemed very calm, like killing people wasn’t a big deal to him.

After listening to this, everyone’s eyes parked up. They knew very well the horrors and ruthlessness of this young city lord. They could already imagine that from today onwards, the outer region would fall into chaos. Those who didn’t put Jiang Chen in their eyes were doomed to face a miserable end. This lesson could clearly be seen from the death of the three city lords previously.

“Big Yellow, bring Lu Sheng with you and go get rid of those stand-alone cities. Remember, others still have a chance to surrender except for the city lord. Bring the city lords’ heads and replace the plaque of the city with Fragrant Sky City’s plaque.”

Jiang Chen’s expression was composed while giving commands. Any command he gave would certainly cause bloodshed. In fact, Big Yellow alone was enough to handle those ordinary cities and Lu Sheng was just going to play a minor role in the invasion.

As for the other city lords in the outer region, Jiang Chen had already given them the death sentence. He had never liked to give people a second chance. The last three days was already the best chance they had. Since none of them knew how to cherish it, they had missed their only chance. Jiang Chen would never feel guilty while killing anyone in Evil Abyss.

“Roger. Leave it to Master Dog. I guarantee that those people’s heads will be flying like crazy.”

Big Yellow gesticulated aimlessly with excitement. Having just advanced to the Divine Immortal realm, he was really fired up

with boundless enthusiasm. He couldn't wait to launch a big massacre to show off his pride and strength.

Big Yellow's sturdy body vanished in a flash. Lu Sheng quickly followed. Big Yellow didn't know the location of those cities but Lu Sheng knew as he had already done a thorough research about them.

"The rest of you, follow me. Today, we will hang the plaque of 'Fragrant Sky City' in all of the cities and kill those who resist on the spot."

Jiang Chen's dark hair fluttered in the breeze. The Qi radiating from his body was like that of a war god. He rose into the air, led the remaining Divine Immortal experts towards the outside of Fragrant Sky City. Ah Da and Ah Er were following closely from behind. Chen Hui, Li Si and those early Divine Immortal experts were also following from behind. Each and every one of them was filled with surging Qi and killing intent. All of them seemed incomparably excited. It was very satisfying for them that they were able to go into war with Jiang Chen and with this such momentum and scale.

Everyone on the scene had witnessed Jiang Chen's means and terror previously. They could already imagine the outcome of those city lords once Jiang Chen reached their cities.

Before departing, Lu Sheng had already assigned someone to prepare a lot of plaques of 'Fragrant Sky City', hanging them on the front gate of those conquered cities. This was an indication of a revolution.

Jiang Chen and the others were moving in a very quick speed. It only took them a few minutes to fly to a city not far away from theirs. Every one of them could already feel the tense atmosphere in the city ahead. The number of guards in front of the gate was increased by many folds. After scanning the city with his divine sense, Jiang Chen could detect at least five mid Divine Immortal

experts.

“What is the name of the city ahead of us?” asked Jiang Chen.

“City Lord, that is the Barren Slope City. However, the forces of the other six cities have gathered here. In other words, they have formed an alliance just to fight us,” replied Chen Hui.

“In that case, there should be six mid Divine Immortal experts inside there.”

Jiang Chen showed a trace of a smile at the corner of his mouth. Mid Divine Immortal experts were never his concern. Even if he didn't participate in the fight, his forces was already enough to get rid of them. Ah Da, Ah Er, Chen Hui and Li Si were all mid Divine Immortal experts. In addition, the combination of Ah Da and Ah Er made them unrivalled to same-level opponents even if there were a lot of them.

“Yes, City Lord. However, such formation is not worth mentioning in front of City Lord.” Li Si flattered.

“Ah Da, Ah Er, they are yours.”

Jiang said without even turning his head. As soon as his words faded, Ah Da and Ah Er turned into two whirlwinds. Forget about the tame looks of these two barbaric bulls, when it came to fighting, they were extremely wild and ferocious.

Roar... Roar...

The two barbaric bulls let out rumbling roars. Two rays of black pillar lights were shot out, destroying several buildings with a bang.

The huge movement had already frightened every expert inside the city. They had been put under a very tensed situation for three days and when someone finally launched a strike on their city so suddenly, even the stupidest man would know it was Jiang Chen.

Swoosh... Swoosh... Swoosh...

Immediately, powerful silhouettes rushed out from the Barren Slope City one after another, into the sky. Every one of them was Divine Immortal experts, altogether, there were at least 30 of them. Six among them were the strongest. Their cultivation had already reached the mid Divine Immortal realm and this went without saying that they were the city lords of the six cities.

Chapter 1241 – Attack the Cities and Seize the Lands (3)

All the experts of the six cities had converged on Barren Slope City. Each and every one of them had soaring killing intent and their faces were filled with fury, but if one looked closely, there was a hint of fear mixed within their angry expression. In truth, there was no way that they wouldn't be afraid. That was why some said the power of one's reputation was akin to the shade of a fully-grown tree. Although they had never seen Jiang Chen before, they were incredibly clear about what he did. Fighting someone like him inevitably gave them a certain pressure in their minds, even though all the forces of the six cities had already combined.

They looked at Ah Da and Ah Er. The physique of these two barbaric bulls were extremely sturdy. The Qi exuded from them was overpowering, but fortunately, these two bulls were merely mid Divine Immortal experts. So they weren't too worried about them.

Their gazes then were shifted to Jiang Chen who was standing behind Ah Da and Ah Er. It went without saying that this handsome youth was the vicious and devilish Jiang Chen.

“Listen up, every one of you. Our master has said that the six city lords will die for sure, whereas the others are given the chance to surrender.”

Ah Da spoke out Jiang Chen's decree straightforwardly.

Their faces changed dramatically when they heard this. Despite knowing Jiang Chen's malicious behavior, his degree of maliciousness still shocked them. Although they were able to understand his ruthlessness and cruelty, what he was doing was a direct challenge to the Evil Lord.

As a matter of fact, they thought that the Evil Lord was their

biggest reliance and Jiang Chen would never dare offend the lord. But currently, it seemed that Jiang Chen didn't have a clue about the rules here. He insisted on going against all the cities of the outer region, perhaps because he was a young man with a very wild ambition and wanted to rule the entire outer region.

“Jiang Chen, don't go too far. Do you really think that you can conquer the whole outer region? All the experts of the six cities have already gathered here and we do not fear you. What you are doing right now is going against the Evil Lord. There is no one who dared to oppose the Evil Lord across the entire Evil Abyss because that's just courting death. I suggest you to stop what you are doing right now. You have already dominated four cities, isn't that enough for you?”

A leading city lord spoke loudly to Jiang Chen with words blended with compromises. To them, it was best if they could avoid fighting Jiang Chen. They would be worry-free if they were able to make Jiang Chen retreat by using the Evil Lord's name.

However, this was simply impossible. The main purpose why Jiang Chen acted so unscrupulously was to attract the Evil Lord's attention. If the chaos in the outer region wasn't big enough to get the Evil Lord's attention, he would bring chaos to the middle region as well.

“I have already given you all the chance. It was you who didn't cherish it. I, Jiang Chen, don't like to give people second chances. As such, the six of you will have to die today. Don't use the Evil Lord to suppress me. After today, all 36 cities in the outer region will be changed to 'Fragrant Sky City',” said Jiang Chen flatly.

All their hopes had been extinguished by this one sentence. It made them understand that it was impossible to make Jiang Chen retreat. This young man was simply insane for not putting even the Evil Lord in his eyes.

“Jiang Chen, you are preposterous! How dare you not put even

the Evil Lord in your eyes? You will die sooner or later, no one here had the guts to oppose the Evil Lord. You are going to face only one end eventually.” The other city lord reprimanded.

“Ah Da, Ah Er, get rid of them in the quickest possible time and seize control of the city.” Jiang Chen didn’t bother conversing with them anymore. He straightway gave the order.

“Yes, master.”

Ah Da and Ah Er’s momentum was overflowing. Their devil Qi was soaring up to the sky. The barbaric bulls lunged towards the enemy’s forces like a violent storm.

“City Lord, we will lend Ah Da and Ah Er a hand to massacre our enemies.”

Chen Hui and Li Si cupped their fists at Jiang Chen, then rushed forward. The rest of the early Divine Immortal experts also hastily joined in to show their capabilities in front of Jiang Chen. They drew their Immortal Weapons and targeted those early Divine Immortal opponents.

“Kill them!”

The leader of the other side clamored. All Divine Immortals unleashed their Qi to the maximum, ready to fight this battle with Jiang Chen to the death.

The scary scene of a life-and-death battle emerged instantly. In fact, all the battles in the Evil Abyss was as cruel as this. It was either you die or your opponent die.

Hong Long.....

Waves of Qi rolled, covering the sky above the city with dark clouds. That was the accumulation of all the energy. Presently, Jiang Chen was standing with his hands behind his back and with a face full of calmness. He now looked like a peerless and lofty emperor that was creating his own empire. There was no need for him to fight in such battle at all.

In fact, both Ah Da and Ah Er were capable enough to handle the enemy's forces, however, the others couldn't just watch Ah Da and Ah Er get all the credit. So, they wouldn't miss this chance to show their skills and abilities as well.

The status in the battlefield was intense and severe. Casualties started to take place. Apparently, the enemy forces had a huge advantage in terms of formation and number, but that didn't make much difference when it came to a real battle. First of all, the morale on both sides were different. The enemy forces feared Jiang Chen ever since they received the declaration letter, which was why they had been in defense mode this whole time. Jiang Chen's forces on the other hand was filled with bursting fighting spirit. Ah Da and Ah Er were overwhelmingly ferocious. With their joint efforts, they ripped apart a mid Divine Immortal city lord alive in their first attempt. This grotesque killing scene could shudder anyone's heart.

Roar... Roar...

The barbaric bulls roared. Both Ah Da and Ah Er had the mighty Heavenly Devil bloodline, which made them stronger compared to any opponent of the same level. Besides, they were twins and had achieved perfect coordination with one another. Therefore, even if they faced late Divine Immortal opponents, they wouldn't have problem dealing with it.

“Argh...”

Another miserable wail was heard. Another city lord couldn't resist Ah Da and Ah Er's aggressiveness and was torn to death on the spot. By now, two city lords had already been killed. Both Chen Hui and Li Si were targeting one city lord each, so there's only two city lords left for the barbaric bulls.

At this moment, the two city lords were dumbfounded and had already lost their senses. They were staring at the two fierce beasts like idiots. To them, these two weren't bulls, but killing machines.

They were just too scary. There was no way that they could continue fighting.

Before this, four of them joined forces to deal with the bulls, but two had already been torn to pieces. What were the odds of them winning this match? It went without saying that their outcome would be the same as the other two, being ripped to parts like a livestock.

Ah Da and Ah Er's ferocity had frightened the two city lords that Chen Hui and Li Si were facing to death. They had lost their morale completely. They couldn't even pant when they were being forced back by Chen Hui and Li Si. On the other side of the battlefield, even though those early Divine Immortal experts outnumbered Jiang Chen's forces, they had all lost their fighting spirit. None of them was a fool. They could naturally see the situation clearly. The difference between the two forces was too great. There was virtually no chance of victory. Besides, the scary Jiang Chen hadn't even joined the fight yet. He was watching the battle like it was a show.

Chapter 1242 – The Infuriated Big Yellow

Chi La!

Regardless of what condition their adversaries were in, the two barbaric bulls only had one thing in their mind, that was to obey Jiang Chen's command. They had to obey any command given by Jiang Chen unconditionally. If Jiang Chen wanted them to kill all the people in the city, no being in the city should stay alive.

The death of the third city lord paralyzed the rest of the experts. How much fighting spirit was left in them now? Everyone including those early Divine Immortal experts were trembling in fear. Their faces had already turned pale.

“No more fighting. No more! We will surrender! We'll surrender!”

“Let's stop fighting and surrender now!”

The last three city lords broke down; immediately, they threw away their combat weapons and surrendered unconditionally. If they didn't do this at this time and continued fighting, it was imaginable what outcome would befall them.

The scene made Chen Hui, Li Si and the allied early Divine Immortal experts incomparably delighted. Their faces were brimming with exhilaration, as it was their first time experiencing such an intoxicating battle. They had been gaining the upper hand during the whole process. Now, they had to admit in their hearts that following Jiang Chen to the battlefield was truly a privilege and pleasure.

Ah Da and Ah Er stopped attacking and turned to Jiang Chen, waiting for his next order.

“What are the two of you looking at? Did the two you already forgot the command I gave you earlier?”

Jiang Chen darted the two bulls a glare as he didn't have any

intention of letting any city lord go. When doing things in the Evil Abyss, one had to be ruthless and decisive, so that his power would be widely known and his prestige be established. Therefore, whenever someone talked about him, it would instantly draw fear out of their innermost soul.

Ah Da and Ah Er didn't dare to show any sign of neglect. Immediately, they rushed towards frenziedly at those three city lords.

“Argh!” “Argh!” “Argh!”

Accompanied by three shrill screams, the sky was filled with mists of blood. The remaining three mid Divine Immortal experts died in the hands of Ah Da and Ah Er. The scene left all of Jiang Chen's enemies dumbfounded and so scared that they didn't even dared to breath. Every one of their bodies shuddered with fear.

It was too ferocious. Jiang Chen truly was a savage being that showed no mercy to his preys.

This was the result of confronting Jiang Chen. It was unfortunate that they didn't cherish the chance he had given them. If they headed over to Fragrant Sky City and surrendered within the acceptable time period, they wouldn't have faced today's outcome.”

“City Lord, what should we do to these people?” asked Chen Hui.

“Don't-don't kill us. We will yield to you and are willing to work for you.”

“Yes. I hope that City Lord understands our situation. We were only following their orders before this, otherwise, we wouldn't have fought in this battle.”

“We beg for mercy, City Lord. We are willing to be your followers.”

.....

These people were completely horrified. Jiang Chen's methods were just too scary and frightening. They had no room for resistance unless they wanted death, but nobody wanted that, especially in a place like Evil Abyss, staying alive was too difficult and everybody who was alive wouldn't miss any chance that could help them to survive.

"Allow them to surrender. I want these people to head over to the other cities and replace the existing plaques with 'Fragrant Sky City'," ordered Jiang Chen.

"Thank you, City Lord. We are willing to follow City Lord and will do anything for City Lord."

These people were overwhelmed by emotions as if they had never felt so delighted in their lives, they had never thought that they would be subdued by a Heaven Immortal one day, but after surrendering to this young devil master, they felt incomparably relieved, as if a big rock had been removed from their hearts.

"Chen Hui, let's go to the other city," said Jiang Chen to Chen Hui.

"Yes, City Lord."

Chen Hui's face was filled with anticipation. Today's battle was just too exciting to him. It was something that he had never experienced in his life. After living in Evil Abyss for quite some time, he had already gained a deep understanding about everything in here. Jiang Chen was the second person to create chaos besides the Evil Lord. The lawless, arrogant and domineering aura that Jiang Chen was exuding could subdue anyone.

Under the lead of Chen Hui, Jiang Chen and the others continued to move forward to another city. By now, of the 36 cities, 10 cities had already been fully controlled by Jiang Chen. The fate of the remaining 26 cities including the four cities that had late Divine Immortal experts would never change.

Jiang Chen's objective was rather simple, that was to complete the unification of the whole outer region in one day. They were afraid that only Jiang Chen had the guts and ability to accomplish such a magnificent feat. No other individual would even dare to think about it.

While Ah Da and Ah Er and the rest were fighting, Big Yellow and Lu Sheng had arrived above a city. This city seemed incredibly serene, like any ordinary city before the war. No guards could be found and there were no signs of alliances.

“What the hell?! There isn't any single defence around? They are totally not putting us in their eyes. Master Dog isn't going to stand such a situation.”

Big Yellow was so angry his nose almost became crooked. He always liked it when someone feared him, but this city was acting so calmly despite knowing that they would strike. How arrogant!

“Calm down, Master Dog. The city lord of this city must have thought that we don't dare launch a large-scale attack and offend the Evil Lord, which is why they seemed so serene. Of course, now that Master Dog has arrived, it will be their end,” said Lu Sheng with utmost respect.

He wasn't any different from the other experts that submitted themselves to Jiang Chen. For instance, although Chen Hui and Li Si had surrendered to Jiang Chen, they had a free body and mind. Oppositely, Lu Sheng didn't have all that as Jiang Chen had planted a divine sense seed in his Sea of Consciousness and this made him a permanent slave to Jiang Chen. He knew how well the relationship between Big Yellow and his master was, so he wouldn't dare show any sign of disrespect to Big Yellow, unless he wanted death.

“Humph! Since they are seeking death, I will fulfil their wishes. Lu, go and call them out.”

Big Yellow shook his sturdy tail and said proudly.

“Yes, Master Dog.”

With a flash, Lu Sheng emerged above the city and shouted with all his might: “Everyone who’s in the city, listen closely! Anyone who doesn’t come out at once will die now.”

Being a mid Divine Immortal expert, his aura was overwhelming. By using all of his might to shout, his voice reverberated within the city, making it impossible for anyone to miss.

In the prefecture, the city lord was inattentively enjoying his wine with a few underlings, but when he heard the sudden loud voice, his facial expression changed drastically.

Chapter 1243 – Cruelty

“Not good, City Lord, that Jiang Chen really came.”

Someone realized the situation and stood up immediately. For a moment, everyone on the scene lost their calm.

“Dammit! How dare this Jiang Chen attack the cities in the outer region?! He’s totally not putting the Evil Lord’s rules in his eyes! Let’s go out and have a look. I don’t believe that he actually has such audacity to oppose the Evil Lord, unless he is tired of living.”

The city lord gritted his teeth. Despite the situation, he still refused to believe that Jiang Chen had the nerve to do so.

Swoosh... Swoosh...

Under the city lord’s lead, several early Divine Immortal experts flew out from the building and into the sky. Instead of seeing Jiang Chen’s huge army, they only saw a dog and Lu Sheng.

“Lu Sheng, you worthless wretch! How dare you submit to a brat! How disgraceful! Why didn’t that Jiang Chen come here himself? Do you think you can deal with us by bringing a dog? This must be a joke,” the city lord spoke sarcastically.

“My master wants to conquer the entire outer region. You have already been given a chance to live before this, but you didn’t cherish it. So today is going to be your death!” shouted Lu Sheng.

“Bullsh*t! That Jiang Chen simply doesn’t know what life and death is. Does he really think that the outer region can be conquered by just anyone? What you all are doing now is a direct challenge to the Evil Lord. Do you have any idea what the consequences will be?” said the city lord loudly.

“Stop your f*cking nonsense! You will certainly die today!. As for the others, Master Dog will now give you all a chance to yield. As long as you kowtow before Master Dog and agree to be Master Dog’s pet, perhaps you may all keep your lives.” Big Yellow stood

before Lu Sheng and spoke presumptuously.

It stupefied the listeners, but they immediately burst into laughter.

“Huh? Where does this dog came from? How dare he act so arrogantly than us? He wants us to become his pet? That’s a serious joke.”

“Stupid dog! Why don’t you pee and look at yourself? Can’t believe that a dog actually knows how to brag.”

“Catch this boastful dog and stew it!”

.....

Obviously, they didn’t have a clue about Big Yellow’s scariness yet, which was a fatal mistake on their part, especially those early Divine Immortal experts as they had just wasted the only chance of keeping their lives.

Seeing the reaction of these people, Lu Sheng couldn’t help but shake his head and sighed. The others might not understand Big Yellow much, but he understood this dog too well. Provoking this dog was a definite no-no. This dog was capable enough to block all their attacks using a formation while being merely a Heaven Immortal expert.

Even though he didn’t know how powerful this dog had become after advancing to the Divine Immortal realm, the fact that Jiang Chen sent this dog here indicated his great strength.

“Courting death!”

Sure enough, Big Yellow lost it completely. Given his hot temper and very short tolerance, it was conceivable what the fate of these people would become after igniting the fury inside of him. For sure, all of them would end up in a tragic death.

Roar...

Big Yellow howled furiously and rushed forward, turning into a

ray of golden light.

“Humph! Can’t believe a dog can actually be this proud. I will personally eliminate it for good.”

The city lord was full of pride. He waved out a dark cloud that charged forward at Big Yellow.

In the face of such a powerful attack, Big Yellow didn’t even dart a glance at it. Golden light shone from his head as he launched himself at the dark cloud.

The city lord couldn’t help but jeer when he saw what was happening. He knew very well how powerful his attack was. He was sure that an early Divine Immortal demon beast wouldn’t be able to withstand this attack even if it used its full-force. So wasn’t this dog rushing to its death by using its skull to clash with the attack?

However, before the smile could fade away from his face, it froze as his so-called powerful attack was destroyed by Big Yellow’s head so easily as if it was made of fragile tofu.

Big Yellow’s charge was unabated, he moved even quicker than before, reaching his target in a twinkle.

“What?”

The city lord exclaimed in disbelief, but Big Yellow’s incredible speed gave him no room for contemplation. It was too late for him to resist the attack even if he used his most powerful attack, so he could only make a random move to stop it.

Bang!

However, such a move had no effect at all in blocking the incoming attack, because there was a fundamental gap between his combat power and Big Yellow’s. Big Yellow’s indestructible head then struck right on the chest of the city lord.

Ka Cha!

The city lord was sent flying away. His chest was badly dented and his mouth was spewing out blood.

At this time, the city lord finally felt the threat of death, knowing how serious the mistake he had made. Before this, he only paid attention to Lu Sheng, totally ignoring Big Yellow. It turned out that this dog was the actual killer.

Roar...

Big Yellow roared once more, flashed the Sparkling Wings and caught up with the city lord in a blink. He opened his big mouth and swallowed the city lord's head.

"No..."

The city lord let out a miserable cry that was filled with fear and despair, and it gave creeps to anyone who heard it.

Ka Cha!

The cry of the city lord stopped when a ripping sound was heard. The ferocious big yellow dog had bitten off the city lord's head in one bite, causing the mid Divine Immortal expert to die on the spot. It was such an easy way of killing a powerful expert.

The remaining early Divine Immortal experts who were mocking Big Yellow had yet to regain their senses from the shock. The scene just now was registered in their mind vividly, and the stench of blood, violence and cruelty had ruined their guts.

"Not possible! How could this happen? How could this dog be this powerful?"

They were shocked, dazed and frightened. By this time, they finally understood their mistake.

"Did some of you want to stew Master Dog?"

Big Yellow gnashed his teeth and approached them slowly. Sensing the pressure coming from Big Yellow, their faces turned pale and bloodless.

“Master... Master Dog, we are willing to yield. Please don’t kill us.”

Someone pleaded. There was no way that he wouldn’t be afraid after witnessing Big Yellow’s cruelty.

“For God’s Sake! It’s already too late!”

Big Yellow darted a glare, then lunged forth. His bloody mouth ripped off their heads one after another. From the beginning of the battle until now, only two minutes had passed. It had completely shocked Lu Sheng who was standing at the back as he didn’t even have the chance to lend a hand. Big Yellow’s ferociousness had left a deep mark in his heart. It made him understand that there would always be abnormal beings following an abnormal being.

Chapter 1244 - Reign of Terror

Mists of blood filled the air. Stench of nose-stinging blood lingered in the air above the city. All the spectators were watching the scene in fear. It didn't concern them much about who would be the ruler of the city, but it was rare to have such a battle even in Evil Abyss. Arguably, it was their first time witnessing such a scene.

Big Yellow's savage means left an indelible shadow in everyone's heart. The Heaven Immortal experts in the prefecture now felt extremely lucky for not having high cultivation, for not being qualified to join in such a battle, otherwise, they would only face one end – death.

Furthermore, they all knew that from now on, their city would be named 'Fragrant Sky City'. They even felt that after today, majority of the cities in the outer region would become 'Fragrant Sky City', the symbol of the new ruler – Jiang Chen.

Lu Sheng replaced the plaque of the city with 'Fragrant Sky City' and reorganized the prefecture before heading towards another city. Today, the outer region was bound to fall into an unprecedented turmoil as Jiang Chen's army continued to invade the other cities.

Hu... *Hu...*

Waves of chilling winds began to spread across the entire outer region, adding to the sense of gloominess that was already in the air. Drifting in the air was the scent of blood and spirit. That was the Qi of death. Every place that Jiang Chen went was filled with bloody stench and death. It was destined that many would die today, and those who died were prominent figures.

Below was a city crowded with all the experts coming from eight cities. No doubt, the number of experts were overwhelming, but it was no different from the time Jiang Chen attacked the alliance of

six cities. Jiang Chen's army was outnumbered, but it still ended pretty quickly in favor of his army.

This time, Jiang Chen personally went into battle. In just about three minutes, five of the eight mid Divine Immortal experts were killed, leaving three trembling individuals with deathly faces. The power and guts that Jiang Chen had were beyond their imagination.

“Don't-don't kill us. We will surrender without a question.”

Nobody wasn't afraid of death, especially after seeing the deaths of their comrades. The fear that they felt was unimaginable, it came from the innermost of their soul.

For instance, when two people knew that they were going to die. The last to die would definitely feel more fear than the one who died first, because he had suffered great shock in his heart after watching his peer died.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen wasted no nonsense. He swung the sharp Heavenly Saint Sword, severing the heads of the three targets, killing them on the spot.

This was a world blended with killings, evils and mercilessness. Jiang Chen had once given them a chance, but none of them cherished it which was similar to courting death. Jiang Chen would never give a second chance because he knew that if he wasn't ruthless enough, he wouldn't be able to set a strong foothold in Evil Abyss.

In such situation, if he wasn't capable and strong enough, he would be the one who would suffer defeat and his opponent would never give him a chance to beg for mercy. They would even make him die more tragically.

The successive deaths of the eight city lords stupefied the rest of the early Divine Immortal experts. Who else would dare to have

the slightest opposition towards Jiang Chen? They didn't even dare to exhale now.

The fact that Jiang Chen killed only the city lords and let the others live had earned him a majestic prestige. After taking over so many cities, he would need people to manage them, and these people were suitable for that role.

By now, nineteen cities in the outer region had already been named 'Fragrant Sky City', which was more than half of the total number. Such scene had never taken place before not only in the outer region but also in the entire Evil Abyss.

There were only seventeen cities left to be conquered. Excluding the four super cities, there were only thirteen left to be subdued, and Jiang Chen wouldn't stop despite of what he had achieved now.

"City Lord, only 13 cities were left to be conquered. Big Yellow and Lu Sheng has already gotten rid of one. Based on Lu Sheng's research, there are a total of three cities that didn't join forces with the other cities. It was only a matter of time before Big Yellow got rid of the remaining two cities. So we only have eleven cities left to take care of. There is a big city that has combined the forces of seven cities not far away from here. They will be our next target." Chen Hui said. He had fully investigated the current situation in the entire outer region.

"We'll eliminate them."

Jiang Chen's eyes were flickering coldly. Once he had decided, he would never change his decision. More importantly, every decision he made had a purpose.

Likewise, the next target was as vulnerable as the previous two and it wouldn't need much time for Jiang Chen's forces to eliminate all the city lords.

While Jiang Chen and the others were invading the seven cities,

Big Yellow and Lu Sheng had already gotten rid of the three rogue cities and had come to reunite with Jiang Chen's forces. Currently, they had reached the place that was close to the middle region.

"Kaka! This is awesome! Master Dog is feeling so exhilarated from the killings!"

Big Yellow felt incomparably delighted, he couldn't stop shaking his robust tail.

"Congratulations, master. Under master's overpowering attacks, we have already conquered 28 cities of the outer region in less than half a day, and all these cities have been renamed 'Fragrant Sky City'. This is undeniably an unprecedented occasion in the outer region." Lu Sheng cupped his fists at Jiang Chen.

"Only eight cities left," said Jiang Chen with ease.

"Yes, City Lord. Taking out the four cities that have late Divine Immortal experts, there are only four cities left and these four have formed an alliance. But due to the bloodshed across the outer region, I'm afraid that they have already known the situation of the other cities. If I'm not mistaken, they must have asked the help of late Divine Immortal experts. What should we do now?" inquired Chen Hui.

"Do what you need to do. Don't stop what we planned. Continue to attack. We must conquer the entire outer region today," said Jiang Chen with a face of indifference. He had never intended to let go of any single city and those late Divine Immortal experts were no concern of his.

Chapter 1245 - Reinforcements

Currently, the prefecture of Dark Yang City was in a state of chaos. The experts of all four cities had converged on this place. Like the other cities, they had joined forces only to fight the devil Jiang Chen.

However, all their confidence had been mercilessly destroyed. At this time, panic emerged in each of their faces. They already knew what had happened to the other cities. They found it hard to believe that Jiang Chen could be so strong and unstoppable that he had succeeded in his every attack.

What made them even more depressed was that Jiang Chen actually dared to do such a thing. At the beginning, like the others, they thought that Jiang Chen wouldn't dare launch any large-scale move, the most this young man would do was to conquer another few cities. Furthermore, their cities were very far away from Fragrant Sky City, which was supposed to be the safest zone.

Unfortunately, Jiang Chen was far more ferocious than they had ever imagined. It now seemed that he was going to conquer the entire outer region. Besides, how could those cities he already conquered be so fragile and vulnerable? None of them could act as a hindrance to Jiang Chen. All of them had been invaded in just half a day's time. To most of them in Dark Yang City, it was like a dream that they would never believe if it wasn't happening in reality.

"What now? I'm afraid that Jiang Chen will be here soon. We will be his next target. Given our current strength, we don't stand a chance against his army and we'll die for sure," someone spoke nervously.

"Dammit! That Jiang Chen is just too savage, totally ignoring the rules of the outer region and not putting the Evil Lord in his eyes. We will be finished while facing such a mad man."

“Why not we just surrender to him if we can’t fight? We can’t just bet our lives.”

“No way. That Jiang Chen has already given us the chance to surrender, but none of us did. Now, everything is over. Jiang Chen will never let any of us go. This is evident from the deaths of the other city lords. Jiang Chen is a man of ruthlessness, but in Evil Abyss, only such man is able to live for long. It’s already too late for us to surrender now. We have to figure out another way.”

.....

At this time, no one could keep their calm any longer. They must think of a solution as soon as possible. None of them would live once Jiang Chen arrived in their city.

“We have to turn to the four super cities for help, only late Divine Immortal experts would be able to help us now.”

“That’s right. I’m sure they won’t just stand there and watch us die. They aren’t fools, they will not hope to see the entire outer region fall into Jiang Chen’s hands. They knew that once Jiang Chen built his empire, it will pose a serious threat to their foothold.”

“Time is of the essence. We should seek help from the neighbouring cities. As long as late Divine Immortals are here to help, we won’t have to be afraid of that Jiang Chen anymore.”

.....

To them, their remaining time was too short. They had to get the help of the late Divine Immortal experts as soon as possible because Jiang Chen would be here at any time, and the consequences were too frightening to imagine.

Nearest to Dark Yang City was a nameless city that had a late Divine Immortal expert, but presently, there was also another late Divine Immortal expert who was the city lord of another city. Apparently, they had already known about Jiang Chen’s matter

and the chaos of today. So, they have come together to discuss some countermeasures.

At this moment, the city lord of Dark Yang City arrived. He was called Mao Sheng. He looked flustered. He immediately cupped his fists upon seeing the two late Divine Immortal experts.

“I beg the two masters’ for help. That Jiang Chen is too arrogant and insane. Most of the cities in the outer region has already been conquered by him. This man massacred everyone and left no survivors. It will be Dark Yang City’s turn soon. I plead for the two masters to help us kill that wicked man.”

Mao Sheng’s tone was full of entreaty. At the present moment, getting help from someone was by far the best solution.

“Mao Sheng, we have already known about Jiang Chen’s matter. Even if you didn’t come, we will both take action in helping your city. We would like to see what made this Jiang Chen so presumptuous. It’s really a joke that he declared his intention of conquering the entire outer region. And that’s not putting any of us in his eyes.”

One of the city lord spoke furiously. Even if the outer region was a weak region, there were still four late Divine Immortal experts maintaining the order of the place. What Jiang Chen was doing not only violated the will of the Evil Lord, but also ignored their very existences which was totally unacceptable to them.

“Many thanks, City Lord. It would be great with your help. No matter how heaven defying that Jiang Chen is, he will never be a match for late Divine Immortal experts.”

Mao Sheng was so excited, as if he had already obtain the life-saving straw. He now felt a pang of relief and some feeling of rebirth, but no one knew how long such feelings would last.

Under Lu Sheng’s guidance, Jiang Chen and the other experts reached the sky above Dark Yang City. The experts of the city had

already been expecting them outside. Two late Divine Immortal experts had already arrived to protect the city. This had given the army an incomparably huge confidence, drastically reducing their fear for Jiang Chen.

“Not good. Master. There are late Divine Immortal experts here. It seems like they have asked the help of the four cities. I’m afraid that we are no match for them,” said Lu Sheng worriedly.

“How do you know that we aren’t a match for them?”

Jiang Chen glared at Lu Sheng for saying such demoralizing sentence in front of his army. If it wasn’t for Lu Sheng’s good intention, Jiang Chen would have already sent him a slap.

The emergence of the two late Divine Immortal experts were within Jiang Chen’s expectation, and this was what he wanted. The fact that only two appeared instead of four indicated the inharmonious relationship within the four cities. It might be a little difficult to handle if the four of them were present at the same time, but with only two here, it made everything easier. The demonic chief in the pagoda wouldn’t have any problems dealing with these two late Divine Immortal experts.

“You are that Jiang Chen?” Mao Sheng pointed and shouted loudly at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen let out a laugh, but didn’t reply to his opponent’s question, he felt that it was senseless to do so as he wasn’t here to converse with his enemy.

“Jiang Chen, your guts is rather too much! Being a mere Heaven Immortal expert, do you think you can really conquer the entire region? That’s ridiculous!” One of the late Divine Immortal experts sneered.

Chapter 1246 - The Shocking Power of the Demonic Devil

The late Divine Immortal experts naturally wouldn't put Jiang Chen in their eyes. They initially thought that Jiang Chen was a powerful dude, however, the group standing in front of them was merely a bunch of Heaven Immortals and mid Divine Immortals, it didn't really concern them at all. How powerful could a puny Heaven Immortal be?

“Jiang Chen, what you are doing have aroused the anger of the whole outer region. I advise you to stop as soon as possible and perhaps that will save you your life!” shouted Mao Sheng.

Jiang Chen sneered after hearing it, then spoke in a flat tone: “What's the use of being angry? All the angry people had already been killed by me. Eventually, those who are still angry at me will only end up just like them, dead, including late Divine Immortal experts. I have already given you all the chance to live. It's just that none of you know how to cherish it.”

After hearing what Jiang Chen said, the two late Divine Immortal experts' nose almost went crooked due to anger. They had never seen such an arrogant brat before, a puny little Heaven Immortal that could speak such preposterous words and did not even put them in his eyes. It was like they were nothing more than dog's fart in his eyes. How could they accept it?

“What a shameless boasting! No need to waste nonsense with him. Immediately finish this ignorant kid off.”

The other late Divine Immortal expert couldn't take it anymore. They were the experts of the experts, the peak figures amongst all in the outer region. No one in the outer region had ever been so rude to them. Immediately, he fluctuated his Qi, and lunged at Jiang Chen with an overbearing killing intent.

He wanted to slap this arrogant brat to death, only this way could he relieve the deep hatred in his heart and teach Jiang Chen a good lesson.

The Qi unleashed by the late Divine Immortal expert could be described as earth-shattering. It caused Chen Hui and the others to shiver with fear. Lu Sheng just kept his silence at one side. Evidently, they were very afraid of late Divine Immortal experts and they were totally clueless of what methods Jiang Chen would use to deal with such an opponent.

However, when they saw the shrewd and composed young man, it gave them a sense of relief.

Everyone believed that Jiang Chen must have ways to deal with a late Divine Immortal opponent, otherwise, he wouldn't be here.

“Demonic chief, it's time for you to come out.”

Jiang Chen ordered. A black light suddenly rushed out from Jiang Chen's body. In a blink of an eye, it transformed into a huge monster.

Roar.....

The devil aura soared up to the sky. Its roar even shook the heavens. As the dense demonic and devil Qi merged together, it created a dark cloud above the sky. The chief demon pounded his chest violently. Despite the fact that he was under Jiang Chen's control, his ferocious nature was still intact. He had also been observing the previous battles, so, he knew that it was only a matter of time before a big massacre broke out. Now that he was released from the pagoda, he was able to release all the stifling feeling that he had after being kept in a confined area for a long time.

Hong.....

The demonic chief emerged right where the city lord was at; it then struck out its huge fist, smashing against the city lord's

attack.

It was true that both of them were late Divine Immortal experts, however, they couldn't be compared. They were totally in different levels. The gap between them could clearly be seen when the city lord was sent flying away by the demonic chief's punch and halted at the place he originally was at.

The city lord's facial expression turned incomparably ugly. Although he suffered no injuries from it, the psychological blow brought by the impact was enough for him to suffer.

“Wah...”

The whole crowd was in ferment. It dumbfounded not only the adversary's forces but also the Divine Immortal experts of Fragrant Sky City, their mouths were wide open. As people living in Evil Abyss, the demonic devils of the Evil Clan were no stranger to them. They had already fought these demonic devils at some point in their lives. Therefore, they were able to determine that this was a mighty late Divine Immortal demonic devil of the Evil Clan judging from its devil's Qi.

“My God, it's a demonic devil from the Evil Clan. It's a mighty late Divine Immortal devil, but why would it listen to City Lord's order?”

“City Lord must have used some kind of means to subdue this demonic devil, otherwise, given the devil's ferocity, it will never submit itself to a human. Before this, when master left the city for two days, no one had thought that he would go and subdue some big monster of the Evil Clan. I can't help but be impressed by him.”

“It turns out that City Lord still has such a huge trump card. No wonder he was so calm moments ago. The two late Divine Immortal human experts won't be a match for this late Divine Immortal demonic devil.”

.....

Chen Hui and the others were too shocked to speak. For a moment, they changed their views on Jiang Chen. Their admiration for him had reached an unprecedented level. It was precisely because they knew the strength of the Evil Clan that it made them admire their master so much. They knew that demonic devils were ferocious by nature and regarded themselves as noble beings. These devils would never lower their heads to a human even if they died. So no matter how powerful a human expert was, he could never really subdue a powerful demonic devil.

However, Jiang Chen was able to do so. If they hadn't witnessed such an astounding scene with their own eyes, they were afraid that they would never believe it.

While facing the experts of Dark Yang City, they could see that each and every one of their faces had changed dramatically. They could similarly tell the origin of this big monster at first glance. And because of this, fear was stirred up inside of them. They knew very well that no one on the scene could be a match for this devil.

"It's a mighty demonic devil of the Evil Clan. In the Evil Abyss, the Evil Clan and the human race couldn't accept each other's existence. So, why did this demonic devil helped Jiang Chen?"

"Damn! Could it be that this Jiang Chen has the means of subduing a powerful demonic devil?"

Mao Sheng and the others felt the urge to cough up blood. Their hope was instantly extinguished. Now that Jiang Chen had a demonic devil as his assistant, anyone could already imagine the outcome of this fight today. It was just like what Jiang Chen said before, they still couldn't defend themselves even with the two late Divine Immortal experts. They were afraid that these two senior experts would face the threat of death too.

"Jiang Chen, how dare you collude with a demonic devil of the Evil Clan? Don't you know that we and the Evil Clan are irreconcilable enemies?" The late Divine Immortal expert shouted.

Chapter 1247 - Fierce and Cruel

Although the late Divine Immortal city lord was roaring, it obviously lacked resonance. In the face of the powerful demonic chief, it was hard for anyone to maintain a vibrant voice. At this time, everyone had already lost their exuberant Qi and confidence. The emergence of the demonic chief had sent them a fatal blow. Currently, there was only fear, the fear of dying.

“Colluding with the demonic devil? That’s ridiculous. Even a fool could tell that this demonic chief is merely my slave, my killing tool. In my eyes, all the Evil Clan are like insects. As long as they are subdued by me, they will become my eternal slaves. If I ordered them to die, they will die immediately in front of me. So why speak about colluding? Anyway, you all are going to die now,” said Jiang Chen indifferently.

He deliberately emphasized that the demonic chief was subdued by him, this would be his first step in approaching the Evil Lord. He believed that this was already enough to attract the attention of the Evil Lord, and it may even intrigued the Evil Lord.

“No, that’s not possible. The Evil Clan are extremely vicious and will never yield to us humans. How can you have the means to subdue them?” clamoured Mao Sheng loudly.

He was unwilling to speak to Jiang Chen, however, his heart was now filled with fear. It wasn’t important whether this demonic chief was subdued by Jiang Chen or associated itself to Jiang Chen. What was more important was that Jiang Chen could control this powerful demonic devil, and this devil was going to take their lives.

“Demonic chief, what are you still waiting for? Kill them now!”

Jiang Chen didn’t bother to continue conversing with Mao Sheng. He immediately ordered the demonic chief to strike.

“Yes, master.”

The demonic chief didn't dare show any neglect in his master's command, immediately, it let out a roar and lunged at the target with boundless killing and evil intent.

“This demonic devil is too powerful. The two of us should combine our strength.”

The city lord who fought the demonic devil earlier spoke. The two of them immediately exchanged a glance, then summoned their own Immortal Weapons, and charged at the demonic chief from two different directions, the left and right. Based on the past experiences they had with the Evil Clan, they deeply understood the scariness of demonic devils. Take this demonic chief for example, there was no other way to fight this demonic devil besides two of them combining their strength. But in truth, they already knew it in their hearts that they were still no match for this demonic chief even after they combined their strength.

Hong Long.....

The Qi of the demonic chief was overpowering. Countless black devil waves radiated from all over his body like the roaring ocean. The layers of black tides converged and formed a peerless and frenzied demon. It seemed illusory like a dream, constantly being overlapped by something and had the capacity to engulf everything.

The murderous intent of the demonic chief soared up to the sky. He launched his strongest attack in their first exchange. The attack was so fierce and uncontrollable that it could level all the cities around. The two city lords could only grit their teeth and exert their maximum strength.

It couldn't be denied that these two city lords possessed quite an ability. Both of their Immortal Weapons slashed out colourful rays that hovered in the sky, like the brilliant heavenly rivers. The power of such an attack could never be underestimated.

The two heavenly rivers merged together and clashed with the demonic chief's attack in a twinkle.

Hong Long.....

The impact produced deafening sounds, great waves of Qi that was powerful enough to destroy everything, and sparks that turned into a sea of fire, burning and evaporating every oxygen in the air.

Roar.....

The demonic chief roared continuously. His huge palm struck out once more, sending out boundless energy. The city lords couldn't resist such an aggressive attack and were sent a dozen steps back before regaining their balance.

As the saying went, one round of battle could already determine the strong and the weak. The faces of the Divine Immortal experts of Dark Yang City turned pale. These city lords were their only hope and reliance. They initially thought that there would be no more problems the moment these two late Divine Immortal experts came to defend their city, even if Jiang Chen had three heads and six arms. However, no one had ever thought of the possibility that a mighty demonic chief would be attacking them. They were still no match even after the two strongest city lords combined their strength. At this rate, they could already imagine the outcome of the battle. Death would be the only thing that awaited them eventually.

Roar.....

The demonic chief roared once more. Having received Jiang Chen's order to kill he would never stop until he completed Jiang Chen's order.

Fortunately, the two city lords had a very good understanding of each other, which made them capable enough to fight the demonic chief, however, Jiang Chen would never give them such an

opportunity.

“Ah Da and Ah Er, attack.”

Jiang Chen commanded coldly. He didn't want to waste anymore time. Based on the current situation, it was best if he could settle this battle as quickly as possible.

“Yes, master.”

Ah Da, Ah Er and the demonic chief were all the same, they were all Jiang Chen's slaves that only had absolute obedience towards Jiang Chen's command.

The heavenly devil barbaric bulls struck. Their objective was very simple – that was to entangle one of the late Divine Immortal human expert. The situation was already clear. As long as they could temporarily keep the other late Divine Immortal expert busy, the other Divine Immortal expert would soon be finished off by the demonic chief.

“Get lost, stupid bulls!”

When one of them saw Ah Da and Ah Er charging at them, he immediately roared and swung his Immortal Weapon at Ah Da. He totally didn't put the two mid Divine Immortal demonic beasts in his eyes. Given his strength, he felt that it wasn't a problem for him to kill one of them with a single sword strike.

However, the reality was very different. When Ah Da and Ah Er combined together, their strength was equivalent to a late Divine Immortal expert. It might be true that they couldn't kill a late Divine Immortal opponent easily, but they wouldn't have any problems keeping their opponent occupied.

When Ah Da and Ah Er managed to get a late Divine Immortal expert entangled with them, the other late Divine Immortal expert confronted the demonic chief alone and suffered injuries due to the frenzied attacks of the demonic chief.

Jiang Chen stood at the back, observing the situation of the

battle ahead. At the present moment, it was no longer necessary for him to intervene in this battle.

“It’s over. It’s totally over now.”

Mao Sheng’s face darkened incredibly, it was like he had aged for a few dozens of years. Despair covered his face. That was right, it was despair. Mao Sheng wasn’t the only one who was feeling total despair, the people of Dark Yang City also felt the same. They could already figure out the fate of these two late Divine Immortal experts, and at the same time, their fates. There was no way that Jiang Chen would let them go.

Chapter 1248 - The Last Two Cities

That was right. The only thing left in them was despair. Despite them seeing Jiang Chen for the first time, they were incomparably clear about his methods and personality. Everything that happened in the outer region was enough to explain everything.

“Haha! It’s over. They are finished!”

Chen Hui laughed loudly, feeling much better in an instant. Having spent so much time in Evil Abyss, today was the most enjoyable and satisfying day ever. Fighting alongside Jiang Chen truly was an exhilarating matter, because he didn’t have to think about anything. All he needed to do was to act on it as the overall situation was in Jiang Chen’s control.

“Big Yellow, don’t be in a daze. Go and do your thing now.” Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow’s head.

“All right!”

Big Yellow stuck out his tongue and rushed into the battlefield in a ray of light.

“We will join in too.”

Chen Hui followed closely from behind with an unparalleled momentum along with Li Si and Lu Sheng. Their target was Mao Sheng and the other three mid Divine Immortal city lords.

Big Yellow alone was already capable enough to handle the four of them. So it was imaginable what would happen if it was a four versus four battle. In light of the current situation, Mao Sheng and the others had already lost their intent and morale to fight completely. They stood no chance even if Big Yellow wasn’t in the picture, Chen Hui and the other two experts were already enough to deal with them.

“Stop the fight. We surrender.”

Mao Sheng was in deep fear, losing all of his desire to fight. He immediately raised his hands to surrender when he saw Big Yellow rushing forward with an unstoppable momentum.

“Surrender to your hell!”

Big Yellow would never give him the chance to yield. With an incredible speed, he appeared above Mao Sheng in a blink, opened his big mouth and ripped Mao Sheng’s head off in the most savage manner, killing the mid Divine Immortal city lord on the spot. Blood gushed out crazily, making the scene extremely gruesome. The other experts of Dark Yang City who hadn’t recovered from shock were now in total despair. The shadow of death had already completely enveloped them, they didn’t even have the chance to surrender.

“Haha, kill them!”

Chen Hui burst into a hearty laughter. With Li Si and Lu Sheng, the three of them lunged into the crowd of experts. They were so excited as if they had been injected with chicken’s blood. They had never felt so passionate before in their lives.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Within just a moment, the place was turned into a bloody scene. Incessant wails could be heard and blood was pouring onto the land. The three of them had gone berserk, murdering even the early Divine Immortal experts.

“SURRENDER! WE SURRENDER!”

“YES! WE SURRENDER!”

Those early Divine Immortal experts were roaring pleadingly to surrender. Based on Jiang Chen’s way of killing, all city lords were doomed to die, but their underlings – the early Divine Immortal experts might still have the right to surrender, the last hope in their lives.

“Let them surrender,” said Jiang Chen in an indifferent way.

Instantly, hope shone in their heads. Every one of those early Divine Immortal expert was moved, shedding tears. They initially hated Jiang Chen to the core. They thought that they were going to die, but this word of Jiang Chen had turned their vengeful heart into a grateful one.

The three remaining mid Divine Immortal city lords had wounds all over their bodies, their faces were pale, surrounded by Chen Hui and his comrades.

“There’s no need to converse nonsense with them. Follow master’s command. Kill them all!”

Lu Sheng was incomparably ferocious. He launched his Immortal Weapon violently, penetrating one of their chests. At the same time, the other two city lords died under Chen Hui and Li Si’s hands before having the chance to escape.

At this time, all of the mid Divine Immortals were already dead. No one was able to live. As for those early Divine Immortal experts, all of those who were still alive had surrendered to Jiang Chen, making Jiang Chen the true emperor of the outer region.

“Argh.....”

On the other side, the late Divine Immortal city lord had finally lost his strength to resist. An arm of his was torn off by the demonic chief. Before he could react, the demonic chief grabbed his skull using its other hand.

Ka Cha.....

The sharp devil claw crushed the city lord’s head. Blood and brain juices burst out from the pressure, causing him to die instantly.

“Son of a b*tch!”

The other city lord who was being entangled by Ah Da and Ah Er swore. Both of his eyes turned red. He couldn’t believe everything that was happening. Currently, he had only one option -- escape. It

was impossible for him to surrender or expect Jiang Chen to let him go.

As expected, the city lord turned and left. Nothing was more important as one's life when one was on the brink of death. As long as he could escape, he would have a chance of having his revenge in the future. As a late Divine Immortal expert, he had a certain connection with the major powers of the middle region. By that time, he would get the help of a half-step Golden Immortal expert and have his revenge.

Roar.....

However, any attempt to escape was no longer viable. The demonic chief had already gone frenzied and wouldn't let him leave. The devil's robust body stood in his way, blocking his only route of escape.

At the present moment, apart from fear and despair, there was also regret inside of him. He regretted ever coming here. If he knew that Jiang Chen wasn't an easy enemy, he would have joined forces with the other two large cities. Having four late Divine Immortal experts would be better than having only two. By that time, even if Jiang Chen had the late Divine Immortal demonic chief as his trump card, victory wouldn't be easily determined.

Even if they still couldn't win the battle, they could get the help from the experts in the middle region. In that case, he wouldn't have to die and could even play a role in taking down Jiang Chen.

But at this point in time, there was no way that he wouldn't die. Without a life, there would be no revenge.

“Argh.....”

At last, under the joint attack of the demonic chief, Ah Da and Ah Er, the city lord was quickly defeated and killed, leaving only a mist of blood behind.

Destructive Qi was still lingering in the sky and a strong bloody

Qi could be sensed everywhere, just like an Asura Battlefield or a gloomy Asura Hell.

“Kaka! Little Chen, the outer region is going to be ours soon!” Big Yellow laughed delightfully.

“City Lord, out of the 36 cities in the outer region, there’s only two cities remaining to be conquered,” said Chen Hui, the one who was most aware of the situation in the outer region.

“Proceed in attacking them.”

Jiang Chen didn’t show any sign of stopping. He wasn’t concerned even though the words of today’s incident had been spread all over the place. In his opinion, today was meant to be the day when all of the cities in the outer region would be named as ‘Fragrant Sky City’.

Chapter 1249 - Confidence

In everyone's point of view, it was an inevitable fact that the last two cities would become Jiang Chen's territory, Jiang Chen's methods were beyond their ability to handle.

At this moment, the situation in the two cities was unsettling. At first, none of them had ever paid much attention to Jiang Chen nor put him in their eyes no matter how much terror he created across the outer region. But now, two late Divine Immortal experts had died under his hands and the fact that Jiang Chen could subdue the mighty late Divine Immortal demonic chief far exceeded their expectation.

"Never thought that Jiang Chen could be this terrifying. We must think of a way to deal with him. Otherwise, we will end up just like them. We are no match for the late Divine Immortal demonic devil even if we combine our strength."

Inside Yi Mo City, the late Divine Immortal city lord was pacing back and forth in the hall, fidgeting nervously. They were very well-informed and had already known everything about the recent incident.

"Those two bastards are really stupid. They should have joined forces with us. If the four of us were together, Jiang Chen wouldn't stand a chance. Now that Jiang Chen has eliminated those two bastards, we are now put on the brink of danger," another person said.

"In fact, they can't be blamed. They have been nursing grudges against us and had virtually no contact with us. So it was logical that they didn't come to seek for alliance. However, it's no use to discuss about this right now. That Jiang Chen is going to be here soon. Given his ferocity and disposition, I'm afraid that he won't let us go." The city lord spoke in a worried tone. Everyone was afraid of dying and the two of them were no exceptions.

“Don’t worry and don’t forget that sooner or later, what Jiang Chen is doing will cause public indignation. No one in the Evil Abyss has ever dared to do what he’s doing. In this territory, the Evil Lord is the only authority and what Jiang Chen was doing is already considered as a sign of disrespect and blasphemy to the Evil Lord. I have the signaling spirit talisman of the experts from the middle region with me. I will now send them out and tell them everything that has happened here. I believe that the experts in the middle region will come and help us kill Jiang Chen.”

The other city lord spoke. He seemed somewhat more composed, at least much more composed than the other city lord.

“Given the situation, this is the only option we have.”

The city lord of Yi Mo City sighed. Like the other city lords in the outer region, he was high and mighty and lived an incomparably comfortable life. Normally, he would never get in touch with the experts in the middle region unless it was a critical situation, the major powers in the middle region was many times greater than them and they had to put themselves in a very humble position in order to talk to them.

So, even if they had the signaling spirit talisman that could directly connect them to the major powers in the middle region, they were still reluctant to use it, but given the current crisis, there was no other way besides seeking help from those supreme experts. They would only await their deaths if no expert from the middle region came here to help.

As a matter of fact, the order in the outer region was no longer their concern, but not their lives. In this world, there was no one who wasn’t afraid of death. The better the life of a person was, the more unwilling the person to die.

The other city lord turned his palm, a pale yellow spirit talisman materialized. The spirit talisman radiated a somewhat divine light. It was a simple signaling spirit talisman that could only be used on

certain areas. As Yi Mo City was very close to the middle region, the message could reach the middle region pretty fast.

Pa!

A stream of divine sense was instilled into the signaling spirit talisman, it then disintegrated and turned into a ray of pale-yellow light and vanished in the air.

After the talisman had been sent out, both of them exchanged a look and heaved a huge sigh of relief. At least, they weren't as worried as before now. In their point of view, as long as the experts in the middle region were willing to help, they had nothing else to fear about Jiang Chen.

Hong Long.....

Not long after they sent out the talisman, a violent blasting sound echoed from outside. The city lords' facial expression changed and they stood up from their seats abruptly. Given their experience, it wasn't hard for them to know that it was an attack.

"Jiang Chen is quick."

The city lord of Yi Mo City said in a quivering tone. There was no question that it was Jiang Chen, there was no one else besides Jiang Chen that would dare to attack them at this time.

"Let's go out and see. Based on the time, I estimate that the experts of the middle region will be here soon," the other city lord spoke, he then brought a huge group of experts out of the city.

These two cities were the strongest in the outer region. They were incomparable to those cities that only had mid Divine Immortal experts, they had plenty of mid Divine Immortal underlings, but apparently, these underlings couldn't make much impact in such battle.

Outside Yi Mo City, Jiang Chen was dressed in white, tall, stately and handsome, he didn't seem to look like a mad devil who was on a killing spree, however, the outstanding Qi that emanated from

his body was beyond anyone's reach, it was like he was the true son of the Heavens. His impalpable aura of emperor allowed him to become the center of attention anywhere he went.

On Jiang Chen's left and right were the huge demonic chief and the murderous and tyrannical Ah Da and Ah Er. Their killing intent was soaring up to the sky. They were ready to strike and level this city any time once Jiang Chen gave the command.

"Jiang Chen, you insane bastard! Do you know what you are doing?"

The city lord of Yi Mo City clamored just like those previous city lords, however, this method had already been proven useless in the past.

"Cut the crap and kill him!" said Big Yellow with great arrogance.

"Jiang Chen, don't be too savage. You won't be able to stay arrogant for long. You have already offended the Evil Lord and it's only a matter of time before you die. Besides, we have already sent a distress signal to the middle region. Soon, the experts there will come to our aid," another city lord spoke loudly.

After hearing the words 'experts from the middle region' Chen Hui and the others couldn't help but tremble. They had been in the Evil Abyss for a longer time, they knew exactly how powerful those big cities in the middle region were.

"City Lord, if the experts from the middle region really appear, I'm afraid that we will be in deep trouble," said Chen Hui with a frown, seemingly somewhat concerned.

"Demonic Chief, Ah Da and Ah Er, attack now and kill the two of them."

Jiang Chen paid no attention to Chen Hui's warning, he immediately gave the order to the three devils. His expression was so indifferent that everyone started to wonder where his confidence was coming from. How could he even ignore the

existence of the experts in the middle region?

Chapter 1250 - Sir Liu

Roar... *Roar...*

After receiving Jiang Chen's command, the three devils immediately let out uncontrollable roars. They were all born killers. In a place like the Evil Abyss, they were basically killing machines that could stir up a bloodshed everywhere they went.

The scene turned the two city lords' and the rest of the Divine Immortal experts' faces ugly. They understood the scariness of demonic devils too well, especially the demonic chief who possessed a domineering momentum. They stood no chance even if it was a two versus one battle. In addition, there were also the two Heavenly Devil Barbaric Bulls.

"What now?" The city lord of Yi Mo City asked.

"There's not much we can do now. The experts of the middle region haven't appeared yet. We must act to defend ourselves. Let's hope that we can last until they come, otherwise we will all die for sure."

The other city lord spoke while gritting his teeth. Ruthlessness glittered in his eyes. He knew the situation very well. Any acts of pleading would be deemed useless because Jiang Chen would never let them go. The only way to this was to persist in the fight. As long as they could hold until the experts of the middle region came, they would have a chance to live.

Xiao.....

The two city lords drew out his Immortal Weapons, both were incredibly brilliant and divine-looking Immortal Sword. Instantly, their combat strength surged to the maximum, they then charged towards the demonic chief and Ah Da and Ah Er, respectively.

Hong Long.....

The sound of a terrible crash was heard instantaneously. The sky

over the entire city was lit up. Violent energy drifted across everywhere. Though the Evil Abyss had always been chaotic, nothing as big had ever happened in the outer region.

Normally, most of the conflicts were either because of personal grudges or to seize each other's treasure. Most of the battles happened because of the friction created among two cities. It was the first time that such a large-scale battle had ever taken place in the region. All cities in the outer region had become victims of the war and Jiang Chen's stepping stone.

Fierce battle waves fluctuated wantonly. The city lord of Yi Mo City was at ease while handling Ah Da and Ah Er. At least, neither he nor his opponents had yet to gain the upper hand, but the other city lord wasn't facing such easy opponent. He could fall into danger any time while confronting the demonic chief. Despite the two of them having the same cultivation base, their combat strength weren't on the same level.

After only a few rounds of battle, that city lord had spurted out blood. It was imaginable that if the battle continued, it was only a matter of time before this city lord was beaten to death by the demonic chief.

"Dammit! This demonic devil is too powerful. Why hasn't the experts of the middle region here yet? I won't be able to hold it for long."

The city lord cursed. Such a scene rendered him speechless and stirred up his sense of despair. It was an impossible thing to do if he wanted to rely only his own strength to ward off this demonic chief.

Hu... *Hu...*

Just at this time, wind blew across the battlefield all of a sudden. Three dark silhouettes emerged above the city. Their momentum was extremely powerful. The two of the three were late Divine Immortal experts like the city lord of Yi Mo City. As for the leader,

his body was radiating some vague profound meaning of Great Luo. Although the profound meaning of the Great Luo was still not so obvious, his power was evidently greater than his companions.

No doubt, this was a powerful half-step Golden Immortal expert, a supreme expert. No experts in Jiang Chen's forces was a match for him. Even the mighty demonic chief couldn't stand a chance before a half-step Golden Immortal expert.

"Haha! The experts of the middle region finally came. It's Sir Liu. Jiang Chen, you all are going to be finished!"

The city lord who was fighting the demonic chief laughed aloud. He flashed past the range of the battlefield and flew towards where Sir Liu was at. The city lord of Yi Mo City did the same. Both of them greeted Sir Liu with cupped fists.

"Sir Liu, you have come here at last. If you are one step later, the two of us will be finished. That frenzied Jiang Chen has already destroyed the entire outer region and our cities are the last," said the city lord of Yi Mo City.

On the other side, each of their faces turned grim as they saw the emergence of the middle region's experts.

"City Lord, they now have the half-step Golden Immortal expert that comes from the major power in the middle region. What do we do now?" asked Chen Hui.

Jiang Chen curled the corner of his mouth and revealed a trace of a smile. Even though the irresistible half-step Golden Immortal expert had emerged from the enemy's forces, Jiang Chen's face was still as composed as ever. This was because he had already calculated their fates using the Great Divination Art before coming here. He calculated that it was highly likely that they would encounter the experts of the middle region, but there would be some accidents happening in the process that would eventually allow him to accomplish his plan.

Although he wasn't able to divine out what kind of accidents would befall them, he had very high confidence on the Great Divination Art.

"Don't worry." Jiang Chen shrugged and showed a face of calmness.

Chen Hui and the others couldn't help but let out a sigh. They really had no idea where Jiang Chen had gotten his confidence from. The opponent standing opposite them was a very powerful half-step Golden Immortal expert and Jiang Chen was merely a puny Heaven Immortal expert. How could a Heaven Immortal expert not put a half-step Golden Immortal expert in his eyes? They were afraid that across the Evil Abyss, only Jiang Chen was able to do this.

"I have already known everything that happened here." Sir Liu spoke plainly.

He darted a glance at the two city lords, then took a step forward, facing Jiang Chen. Both of his blade-like eyes were constantly studying Jiang Chen from top to bottom as if he was trying to see through every bit of Jiang Chen.

"You are that boundlessly arrogant Jiang Chen? You must have just arrived here. You do have the great guts." Sir Liu spoke whilst showing total disdain towards Jiang Chen.

He was a high and mighty half-step Golden Immortal expert, so naturally, he wouldn't put a puny Heaven Immortal in his eyes and he earned the right to disdain a puny junior.

"That's right. I'm that Jiang Chen. I suggest you to not interfere in the matters in the outer region as the consequences is not bearable to you," said Jiang Chen flatly.

After hearing this, Sir Liu seemed dumbfounded, doubting if he had just heard wrongly. How dare a young Heaven Immortal expert remind him not to interfere in the matters and say that he

couldn't bear the consequences? Wasn't this a joke? He was baffled by how could this young man be so arrogant.

Chapter 1251 - Another Demonic Devil

“Brat, do you know what you are talking about? It’s understandable that a young man has a pride of his own, but too much pride means that the man is having some issues with his intelligence. It seems like you don’t have a clue about the rules in Evil Abyss which explains why you have the nerve to commit all of these crimes. No one has ever dared to disobey the will of the Evil Lord and there’s no exception. You have to pay a hefty price for what you have done today, also I have a question for you: how were you able to make a demonic devil of the Evil Clan listen to your commands?” Sir Liu asked curiously.

As a half-step Golden Immortal expert in the middle region, he obviously had more dealings with the Evil Clan compared to everyone here and this gave him a clear understanding of the nature of the demonic devils. He knew that it was impossible for a human to subdue a demonic devil of the Evil Clan and turn it into slave. This was something that the Evil Lord had tried to do over the past ten years. So, it surprised him to see that a Heaven Immortal youth could actually achieve such a thing.

“I naturally have my own means. What the Evil Lord can’t achieve doesn’t mean the others can’t as well.”

Jiang Chen shrugged and said indifferently. He wasn’t in a hurry to attack and was anticipating for the miracle he divined to emerge.

“Sir Liu, this kid is too arrogant. How dare he not put even the Evil Lord in his eyes? Don’t waste anymore nonsense with him. Kill him immediately along with this demonic devil.”

A late Divine Immortal expert next to Sir Liu spoke. He couldn’t stand Jiang Chen’s arrogance anymore. No matter how great a puny Heaven Immortal expert was, it still didn’t give him the right to behave preposterously in front of them.

“Good, I’ll kill this demonic devil and the rest of you go and handle that Jiang Chen. Remember, don’t kill him. I’m very intrigued by his technique to subdue a demonic devil.” Sir Liu spoke.

The longer one stayed in Evil Abyss, the better one knew about the fierceness and ferocity of the Evil Clan. The technique to subdue a demonic devil of the Evil Clan was something worth pursuing. If he could acquire such a technique, his future path in Evil Abyss would surely prosper or even catch the attention of the Evil Lord and be recruited as one of the important generals in Evil City.

However, these were all only Sir Liu’s imagination. It was impossible for him to acquire the Edifying Light from Jiang Chen, it wasn’t a skill for everyone to cultivate.

Swoosh.....

Sir Liu’s gaze fell upon the demonic chief and a tremor run through in the devil’s body. Apparently, the demonic devil was somewhat intimidated by this half-step Golden Immortal human, however, the ferociousness and sharpness in his eyes kept him from retreating. His body began to emanate a stronger evil and killing Qi. This had always been the disposition of the Evil Clan. They would never compromise even in the face of death, which was why Sir Liu was so surprised to learn that Jiang Chen was able to subdue a demonic devil of the Evil Clan.

“Humph!”

Sir Liu harrumphed coldly and struck out a palm abruptly. An enormously huge palm print fell from above, appearing right above the head of the demonic chief.

Roar...

The demonic chief turned frenzied. Devil Qi soared up to the sky from its body. A dark devil wheel was struck out and clashed with

the shinning big palm.

The faces of the people in Jiang Chen's side turned ugly. They didn't seem to have any chance of victory while facing a half-step Golden Immortal expert. If Jiang Chen didn't have another trump card in this battle, they all believed that they were going to face some serious consequences.

Hong Long.....

The impact between Sir Liu's and demonic chief's attacks turned the sky gloomy. As Sir Liu was a half-step Golden Immortal expert, his combat strength was much stronger than the demonic chief. The demonic devil was no match for him and was at a disadvantage in their first exchange. The black scales on its body were shedding in big pieces. Blood was spewing out of its wounds incessantly. It had suffered a severe injury after just one strike. If this devil was replaced by an ordinary late Divine Immortal human, they're afraid that this palm strike would straightaway crush that expert.

"Not good. We're finished."

Chen Hui's face paled. The other four late Divine Immortal experts had already locked onto his position, ready to strike at any time. As for the demonic chief, if there was no accident, it would be killed by Sir Liu in two more strikes.

"Little Chen, do you have any other trump card?"

Big Yellow whispered. Having understood Jiang Chen deeply, he estimated that Jiang Chen had no other trump cards except for the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda that could help them escape. Although Jiang Chen had a very strong combat strength, there was still a huge difference between him and the half-step Golden Immortal expert.

"No more." Jiang Chen shrugged, but there wasn't the slightest bit of distress in his expression.

Big Yellow rolled his eyes, admitting that Jiang Chen was definitely not human for staying so composed even in such a dire situation.

“Jiang Chen, as you can see, your so-called power is simply too fragile in front of me. If you tell me the technique you used to subdue this demonic devil, I can spare you your life. You can be assured with my character.” Sir Liu looked over at Jiang Chen and smiled.

“Unfortunately, your character is not worth mentioning before me.” Jiang Chen darted a glance at Sir Liu, seemingly unconcerned.

“Very well. Since you don’t know what is life and death, I’ll fulfil what you are asking for. After killing this demonic devil, it will be your turn to die,” said Sir Liu coldly.

Immediately, he struck out another powerful attack at the demonic chief. This time, the Qi and force of the attack was apparently much stronger than before. It seemed like he didn’t want to waste any more time and wanted to end the battle quickly.

The demonic chief’s pupil widened. As a powerful expert, it could sense the horror of this strike and it firmly believed that this wasn’t a strike it could simply resist.

Roar.....

At this moment, an angry roar suddenly echoed out of nowhere. All of a sudden, a giant emerged on the scene, carrying boundless Qi waves with it. It moved at an incredible speed, appearing before Sir Liu in a blink, and struck out a scary palm that sent Sir Liu backwards.

It turned out that this giant was another powerful demonic devil of the Evil Clan as it had the same strong evil Qi. Additionally, its cultivation was much stronger than the demonic chief. It had already reached the half-step Golden Immortal realm like Sir Liu.

Now, not even Sir Liu was a match for this devil.

“What?”

Sir Liu exclaimed, he couldn't believe what he had just seen. His first thought was that this powerful demonic devil must be another demonic devil subdued by Jiang Chen, it baffled him how a puny Heaven Immortal could subdue a half-step Golden Immortal demonic devil so easily.

Chapter 1252 - Brothers Reunited Once More

Roar.....

The newly-emerged demonic devil roared, as if wanting to express every anger that had been suppressed inside of it. Its killing intent soared up to the sky. It now looked exactly like when the demonic chief was just released from Jiang Chen's pagoda.

The sight of the roaring demonic devil changed everyone's face and tensed up the atmosphere. Everyone in Yi Mo City was now gawking at this fearsome devil. Of course, the one who was astounded the most was Sir Liu because he was clueless about how did Jiang Chen summon a half-step Golden Immortal demonic devil at such a critical time.

Likewise, all of the people in Jiang Chen's side were shocked. It changed their views of Jiang Chen's completely. Currently, Jiang Chen was no longer merely a young man to them, but a divine existence that could always create miracles, as if nothing was impossible for him in this world.

"My God! That's a half-step Golden Immortal demonic devil and it has already been subdued by City Lord! I wouldn't have believed it if I didn't see it with my own eyes. City Lord's means have is really beyond us and is heaven defying to such an extent."

"Yeah, that's unimaginable. No wonder City Lord has always looked confident. It turns out that he actually has such an incredible trump card. We will certainly gain lots of benefits by becoming his loyal followers."

"It doesn't matter if we can't get any benefits. Most importantly, we can't betray this master, otherwise we are going to end up miserably."

.....

Discussion and comments broke out from the group of Divine Immortal experts. Each and every one of them admired Jiang Chen so much that they wouldn't even mind prostrating before him. The reverence they had for their master was like the endless stream of surging rivers. Everyone would constantly remind themselves that they shouldn't have a single thought of betraying their master -- making Jiang Chen the enemy wasn't a good thing. Taking the outer region for example, everyone who went against Jiang Chen were dead and that wouldn't exclude the half-step Golden Immortal expert.

Jiang Chen shook his head, feeling slightly awkward when he saw those admiring eyes, because this half-step Golden Immortal demonic devil wasn't edified by him.

"Little Chen, when have you gotten the ability to edifying this big dude?" asked Big Yellow with a smile.

"This big dude wasn't edified by me."

Jiang Chen shook his head, he then shouted at the void with laughter. "Little Monk, since you have come, why are you still hiding?"

As soon as Jiang Chen's words faded, a part of the void from a distance trembled; then a monk in a golden robe appeared. He stepped forth towards them, radiating a bright Buddha light and such solemnity that one could instantly tell that he was an eminent monk.

Big Yellow rolled his eyes first when he saw the monk; then bounced excitedly. That was right. This monk wasn't a stranger. He was their sworn brother, Tyrant. His return astonished and exhilarated Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

In fact, Jiang Chen could already deduce Tyrant's existence the instant he saw the emergence of the demonic devil. As he had very keen sense for the aura of the Edifying Light, he could instantly detect the traces of the Edifying Light in the demonic devil's body.

In other words, the demonic devil had already been edified by someone.

Across the world, there were only very few people who cultivated the Edifying Light. If that person knew the Edifying Light and came to Jiang Chen's aid during a critical situation, that person could only be Tyrant.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had no idea why Tyrant appeared in the Evil Abyss, but they were both shocked by Tyrant's cultivation as he had already reached the terrifying late Divine Immortal realm, although it seemed like he had just made his breakthrough recently. However, this gave the two of them the urge to bash the monk's bald head, because they had been in the Immortal World for far longer than Tyrant.

"Where did this monk come from? Could he be an eminent monk from the White Dragon Temple?"

"I don't think so. The White Dragon Temple is a super major power in the Ethereal Immortal Domain that would never come in Evil Abyss. Moreover, they have always been low-profile and rarely appears."

"Why would this monk help us?"

.....

Everyone's gaze fell on Tyrant. There were also Buddha Sects in the Immortal World. The renowned White Dragon Temple was akin to the Great Lightning Tune Temple in the Saint Origin World. It was the symbol and representative of Buddha Sect and Tyrant's appearance made the others can't help but think of this temple.

"Wakaka! Little Chen, Big Yellow, you two bastards! It's so hard to find the two of you!"

However, in the next second, the image of a solemn eminent monk vanished. He approached Jiang Chen, spread open his arms

and gave him a bear hug. Before Jiang Chen could react, Tyrant extended his mouth and planted a forceful kiss on Jiang Chen's face.

Puff.....

Some people stumbled and flopped on the ground while many of them were rolling their eyes uncontrollably.

He's an eminent monk from the White Dragon Temple? Dammit! His whole image was ruined! Seeing such a monk surely was an eye-opener to everyone.

"F*ck!"

Jiang Chen, too, rolled his eyes like crazy, and kicked Tyrant off with force. All of his reputation was ruined by this monk's forceful kiss.

Tyrant chuckled; then turned to Big Yellow. Big Yellow felt a chill down his spine, and quickly moved farther away from Tyrant. He had never admired anyone in the aspect of shamelessness except Tyrant.

"If you dare to kiss Master Dog, Master Dog will swear that he is going to bite you to death," Big Yellow warned immediately.

"Go to hell, who wants to kiss you!" Tyrant glared at Big Yellow.

The atmosphere seemed to be much more favourable now. The three brothers had expressed the indescribable joy of their reunion in their own way.

"Little Chen, how did you two end up here?" asked Tyrant.

"Let's talk about this again after this situation is resolved."

Jiang Chen patted Tyrant's shoulder. He had a lot of questions that he wanted to ask Tyrant. Despite knowing Tyrant's potential, he knew that it was impossible for his brother to achieve such an advancement within such a short period of time. He knew that Tyrant must have gotten something beneficial along the way.

Even though Jiang Chen had already predicted that a miracle would happen today, he hadn't imagined that it would be his sworn brother. Nothing could be more perfect than this.

Putting aside the fact of whether Tyrant could kill the half-step Golden Immortal expert with his late Divine Immortal combat strength, this half-step Golden Immortal demonic devil alone was already enough to knockout every opponent on the scene, this has made today's battle no longer as meaningful.

Chapter 1253 - Taking Control of the Outer Region

“Jiang Chen, you really want to kill me?” Sir Liu could already feel Jiang Chen’s killing intent and spoke coldly.

“Don’t you want to kill me? Since you want to kill me, I, too, can also kill you,” replied Jiang Chen flatly.

What he said was an irrefutable fact. The Evil Abyss was originally a very ferocious place, a place where it was either you or your opponent die. So when Sir Liu decided to take his opponent’s life, his opponent too could also take his life.

“Jiang Chen, don’t you get too presumptuous. I’m an expert of a major power in the middle region. A person that you can’t afford to offend. Even if you don’t put the Evil Lord in your eyes, the major powers of the middle region aren’t someone to be trifled with. The number of Golden Immortals in the middle region is beyond your imagination. If you kill me today, you are surely going to feel the wrath of the major powers of the middle region.”

Sir Liu felt reluctant. He had intended to flee but the powerful demonic devil had already locked onto his Qi, making it extremely difficult for him to leave.

“You are really talkative even in the face of death. Let Master Monk help you release your soul from your sinful body.”

Tyrant shook his head; then said to the demonic devil: “Da Kuaitou, kill him now, if you can’t do that, then I will flay you alive.”

Roar...

After receiving Tyrant’s command, Da Kuaitou immediately let out a roar. Clouds of devil waves soared up to the sky. Then, the demonic devil charged at his target like a mad creature, carrying boundless destructive Qi waves with him. After being edified by

Tyrant, he had already become Tyrant's slave that obeyed all the instructions of his master.

Run!

Without putting much thought on it, Sir Liu flew from the battlefield the instant the demonic devil launched itself forward. As a man who had great understanding of the Evil Clan, he knew all too well how powerful this demonic devil was. Although they were both half-step Golden Immortal experts, he wouldn't be able to gain the upper hand should the battle continue and would eventually end up in a tragic death. If he fled now, he might still have a chance. As for the others, he was no longer in the position to care for their safety.

"Humph! If you were to run away, where should Master Monk put his face at?"

Tyrant had already anticipated that this would happen. Promptly, his body flashed. He moved at his maximum speed, blocking the path of Sir Liu in a blink.

"Stupid bald head! Get lost!"

Sir Liu clamoured furiously, he did not put a monk in his eyes. There was no way that this late Divine Immortal monk could match his half-step Golden Immortal strength.

Swoosh!

Sir Liu swung his Immortal Sword, slashing out a brilliant light at Tyrant.

Hong...

Calmness was the only thing that could be seen on Tyrant's face. He was also a fighting maniac. Although he was only a late Divine Immortal expert, he wouldn't have a problem fighting against a half-step Golden Immortal opponent. He waved to strike out a palm, sending out a gale that condensed into Wisdom King's face. This was the formidable Acala Seal of Buddha Sect with a power

that was far stronger than any ordinary combat technique.

Under the suppression of the Acala Seal, Sir Liu could feel the irresistible and endless pressure before being sent flying away by attack. Coincidentally, the direction he was heading was where the demonic devil was flying over.

Ka Cha!

The demonic devil clasped both of Sir Liu's arms with its terrifyingly huge claws, it then roared deafeningly and tore him to pieces.

Hiss...

The scene was startling. Everyone's facial expression darkened incredibly as it was just too violent. A half-step Golden Immortal expert was killed just like that. Sir Liu was certainly no match against Tyrant and the demonic devil. The whole process was horrifying and bloody.

“Over...It's over....”

The city lord of Yi Mo City shuddered while feeling the ultimate despair. It was an unbearable cycle when a person's despair was turned into hope then to despair again.

The most depressed individuals were the two late Divine Immortal experts who had come together with Sir Liu. The both of them had the impulse to cough up blood. They were secretly scolding themselves, asking themselves why they chose to come here. Wasn't it a lot better if they stayed in the middle region? It was too late for them to escape now. They were no fools. They could already see Jiang Chen's ferociousness and dominance; and given the norm in Evil Abyss, all of their hopes had now been destroyed.

“You two, submit to me now and I will let you live.”

Just as the two of them were in their deepest despair, Jiang Chen spoke and offered them a chance all of a sudden.

After listening to this, the both of them were stupefied for a moment before delight took over their emotion. Compared to death, surrendering was definitely a better choice. And the last thing anyone wanted in Evil Abyss was death.

“We agree.”

The two of them didn't dare show any neglect. They immediately approached Jiang Chen and saluted deeply. Although they had never thought that they would be subdued by a Heaven Immortal one day, they weren't reluctant to comply with it.

“Jiang Chen, we will surrender as well.”

The city lord of Yi Mo City and the other city lords spoke. The sight of Jiang Chen offering the two late Divine Immortal experts the choice of surrendering made them see a glimmer of hope.

“Kill them.” Jiang Chen gave out the order without even looking at them.

“Jiang Chen, why did you offer them the chance to live but not us?” The city lord of Yi Mo City paled.

“Because I have already given you all the chance. I will never give my enemy a second chance. They are the same. I will only give them one chance. So if they refused to submit themselves to me, they will end up just like the lot of you,” said Jiang Chen plainly, totally ignoring the despair of his enemies.

Roar...

Da Kuaitou roared and struck out a palm, crushing the two city lords to meat paste on the spot. As they were both merely late Divine Immortal experts, they couldn't withstand the demonic devil's attack.

At this point, all 36 cities in the outer region had already been taken by Jiang Chen, and they were now all named Fragrant Sky City.

Tyrant and Jiang Chen were standing next to each other, everyone was staring in fear at the monk. The monk didn't only have the ability to subdue the mighty half-step Golden Immortal demonic devil, but also had an amazing combat strength. This could be seen when he confronted Sir Liu.

“Little Chen, there is always chaos everywhere you go. I have been in Evil Abyss for a long time. When I came to check the situation of the outer region out, I was surprised to discover that you were the source of the chaos. Haha! But this is what I call exhilarating. We can't be living in an overly quiet and boring life even if we have already ascended to the Immortal World.”

Tyrant laughed loudly. His passion for fighting was awakened after he reunited with Jiang Chen and went through an intense fight.

Chapter 1254 - The God Shaking Monument

“That’s of course. This mere outer region is just the beginning. Tyrant, let’s go into the city to have some drinks and chat.”

Jiang Chen clamped his hand on Tyrant’s shoulder and flew towards the prefecture of Yi Mo City. These two brothers hadn’t seen each other for a long time and there were too many things for them to catch up.

“Chen Hui, although we have already ruled the entire outer region, I’m afraid that it won’t last very long. After killing Sir Liu, I’m afraid that the major powers in the middle region would never let this matter rest. Plus, the incident in the outer region will very soon arouse the notice of the Evil Lord in Evil City, our lives surely wouldn’t be easy after that,” said Li Si with concern.

“With City Lord here with us, we don’t have to worry and think about it so much. City Lord naturally will have a plan when it comes to that critical moment.”

Chen Hui shrugged. He now only had thorough admiration for Jiang Chen, feeling that there was nothing in this world that could bring City Lord down. It didn’t concern him at all even after they had killed an expert of a major power in the middle region.

“You’re right.”

Li Si smiled, realizing himself being overly concerned. Even if there were things to be concerned about, it should be their City Lord’s matter.

“Let’s go. The outer region has just been conquered. There are lots of things that we have to do,” said Chen Hui.

Even though all 36 cities had already been conquered by Jiang Chen and renamed as ‘Fragrant Sky City’, there were still plenty of internal problems that needed to be solved in those cities and naturally, they would be the ones responsible to settle all those

problems.

Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and Tyrant gathered in the big hall in the prefecture of Yi Mo City . Anyone else other than the three of them was chased out of the hall, outsiders would only distract the hearty conversation of the three brothers.

Jiang Chen spoke about his journey with Big Yellow in the Immortal World to Tyrant. After listening to what Jiang Chen said, Tyrant was astonished even though he was already mentally prepared for it.

“You never bring peace wherever you go. You are just a Heaven Immortal expert, but have already made a half-step Immortal King your enemy. However, I believe that Tian Muyun is going to die in your hands sooner or later,” said Tyrant.

Like the others, he had an inexplicable confidence in Jiang Chen. Back in Saint Origin World, Jiang Chen had created countless legends and miracles. Even if Jiang Chen was now in the Immortal World, he would still create those kinds of extraordinary results.

“Tyrant, how was home?” asked Jiang Chen, sounding very worried about the situation at home.

“Everything was good back home. As the entire Saint Origin World has already been conquered by Martial Saint Dynasty, no one dared to disobey its command. You don’t have to worry about that. By the way, back when I ascended to this world, Sister Ning and Xiao Yu have already reached the benchmark of ascension. One day in this world is equivalent to one year in the world below. So, I’m afraid that two of them have already ascended to this world, it’s just that I’m clueless about where they are at,” said Tyrant.

Jiang Chen nodded. He had already expected this when he first met Han Yan. Due to them not having that much difference in terms of talent, their time of ascension wouldn’t vary too much as well. So by now, they should have already ascended to this world.

“Ah Yan went to a domain outside One-Line-Sky. I wasn’t concerned about him as he already had the ability to protect himself. Xiao Yu and Sister Ning are the ones that concerned me the most, the Immortal World is just too big and it’s too hard for us to meet again. We can only depend on fate now,” said Jiang Chen.

Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu were the most important people in his life. If something were to happen to them, it would certainly deal a huge psychological blow to him. Of course, it was better to be optimistic about this matter.

“I’m rather unlucky in my ascension. After I ascended to this world, I straightaway entered the Evil Abyss. So, there was no way that I could find Ah Yan and the lot of you. However, I have never thought of meeting you two here, which helped me achieve my first objective in the Immortal World,” said Tyrant with a smile.

As a matter of fact, when he knew that he was trapped in this place, he didn’t have much hope on finding Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. So, it was truly a miracle for them to reunite again, and this made Tyrant extremely happy and delightful.

“Stupid monk! Why did your cultivation improve so much? Was it because you have obtained some great things in Evil Abyss?” Big Yellow asked.

“Not really. Do you all still remember the stone monument that I used to have?” replied Tyrant.

“Yeah, I know. That stone monument is incomparably mystical, unlike any ordinary item. Could that stone monument be related to your advancement?” inquired Jiang Chen.

“That’s correct.”

Tyrant turned his palm. The piece of blood-red stone monument materialized, drifting back and forth on top of his palm. Jiang Chen couldn’t help but tremble when he felt the Qi radiating from the stone monument, he could feel a familiar sense of Qi from it, a

high and noble Qi.

That was the Qi of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. There was no doubt about it. These two treasures didn't come from the same origin, but both of them emanated the same ancient, desolate, noble and supreme aura.

To put it in another perspective, if the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was a high and mighty god, then the stone monument on Tyrant's hand was another noble god.

"This stone monument is remarkable. It is an ancient existence equivalent to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, beyond any ancient supreme divine weapon. Tyrant, you do have good luck!"

Jiang Chen was startled in his heart. Back when he first saw the stone monument, it didn't have such a Qi. It seemed like Tyrant must have stimulated something inside to cause such changes.

"I already have a certain understanding of the origin of this stone monument. This monument was left behind by the first generation of Buddha Nirvana. It was called the God Shaking Monument. It contained the essence of the ancient Buddha Sect. Like what you have said, I have gotten tremendous benefits by stimulating the essence inside of it and because of that, my cultivation improved by leaps and bounds. I have also acquired a cultivation technique named Bright Buddha Body. Once this technique reached its completion, it could be fused with the monument into one. However, this definitely can't be done overnight," said Tyrant.

After listening to Tyrant, Big Yellow and Jiang Chen exchanged a glance and sighed, admitting that this dude had tremendous amount of luck, which explained how he improved so much within such a short period of time. It seemed like Tyrant's future achievement would surely be immeasurable and he would ultimately become a supreme monk of his generation in Buddha Sect.

As his brothers, they felt incomparably happy that Tyrant had

such achievements. The second reason that they were happy for Tyrant was because Tyrant was originally an orphan who was fortunate enough to be adopted by Great Monk Ran Feng, and life wasn't easy for Tyrant since he was young.

Afterwards, the three brothers chit-chatted for a long time. They had caught up with basically everything that had happened after they were separated. Despite Tyrant's early arrival in Evil Abyss, he didn't have much understanding of the situation here as he had been hiding himself, cultivating with the God Shaking Monument. So, he basically didn't pay much attention to the events happening throughout the Evil Abyss.

Chapter 1255 - The Evil Lord's Bearing

“Little Chen, now that the outer region has been unified and Sir Liu killed, I’m afraid that it will bring you numerous troubles. Additionally, what you did violated the majesty of the Evil Lord. Do you think he will attack us because of this?” Big Yellow asked in a somewhat worried tone.

“Let me be open with you all about it. The purpose of my act is exactly to draw the attention of the Evil Lord. What do you all think is the Evil Lord’s greatest dream?” Jiang Chen looked over at Tyrant and Big Yellow with a smile.

“Of course, to reign over the entire Evil Abyss and wipe out the whole Evil Clan.”

Tyrant and Big Yellow answered spontaneously. The Evil Lord had already been in this place for ten years and his goal was already known by everyone. Just by relying on his own strength, he had helped mankind colonize half of the Evil Abyss and had created a force that was as powerful as the Evil Clan since then. Even though this was already considered a terrifying act and achievement, it was impossible for the Evil Lord to eliminate the Evil Clan entirely and become the only master of the Evil Abyss.

“That’s correct, but if he could subdue the Evil clan and make them his slaves, I’m afraid that his sense of accomplishment will be far more gratifying than just wiping the devils out,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“I understand now. Your real purpose is to allow the Evil Lord to notice your ability to subdue the demonic devils of Evil Clan. The Evil Lord will surely be intrigued by such an ability which he doesn’t have. Now that Tyrant is here too, and has a similar power to subdue mighty demonic devils, it would be hard for the Evil Lord to not pay attention to us. Haha! This definitely is a good move.” Given Big Yellow’s smartness, he was able to guess Jiang

Chen's ulterior motive almost instantly.

“So, even if the major powers of the middle region want to get rid of us, the Evil Lord won't agree to it, the outer region is nothing to him compared to his ultimate plan.”

Jiang Chen smiled. There was no doubt this was a wise move. He was certain of his actions, especially after he cultivated the Great Divination Art, like everything was within his control. He had once calculated the fate of the Evil Lord using the Great Divination Art and found out that this overlord of the Evil Abyss was unlikely to become his enemy.

As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen also wanted to meet the Evil Lord in person. In a way, he and the Evil Lord were the same kind of people with extraordinary fighting spirit and were unwilling to accept mediocrity. That's why the Evil Lord created this piece of territory for the human race.

“Little Chen's right. We don't have to do anything right now. All we have to do is to wait for the Evil Lord to come looking for us. To us, the Evil Lord is someone that we have to meet anyway, the passageway to the outside world is in his possession and we can't stay here forever. So we have no other choice,” said Tyrant.

“Smart.”

Jiang Chen raised his thumbs up for Tyrant, the truth was similar to what Tyrant had said. It was easy to enter Evil Abyss, but it wouldn't be the case if one wanted to leave this place because the only exit was under the watch of the Evil Lord. That was the reason Jiang Chen conquered the entire outer region to attract the Evil Lord's attention. In other words, they would need to get in contact with the Evil Lord if they wished to get out of this place.

The middle region of Evil Abyss!

The geographical division here wasn't much different to the outer region. It was also divided into a number of cities. Although

the cities here were as many as the outer region, their sizes were a lot bigger. There was a city that was the closest to the outer region. Its air was lingering with mists, Qi waves were rolling in the sky above, spreading the evil Qi to the surrounding area. This was one of the city in the middle region, a city that had the existence of a true Golden Immortal expert.

Currently, inside the city was a group of higher ups. Sitting on the top most was a man in his forties, with a moustache, a beard and a robust physique. The Qi he was exuding could make people's soul tremble. There was also a strong Great Luo detected from his body. That was the symbol of Golden Immortal realm. Without a doubt, his current cultivation had already reached the early Golden Immortal realm.

Wherever a mighty Golden Immortal was, he would certainly prosper. He could even be a city lord in this highly competitive and cruel abyss.

Sitting below the Golden Immortal were a few powerful experts. Two of which were half-step Golden Immortals like Sir Liu. For a major power as strong as this, no one in the outer region would dare to disobey it.

At this moment, the city lord was infuriated. His eyes were blazing with fury. Everyone there could sense his anger.

“Hubris! That's absolutely hubris! It was fine if he only unified the outer region, but he had also killed one of my men. This Jiang Chen must have too much of a nerve.”

The infuriated city lord slammed on the armrest of the chair, breaking it instantly.

“City Lord, that Jiang Chen is a pretentious man who thinks that he has some kind of extraordinary talent. He is lawless and doesn't put any one of us, and even the Evil Lord, in his eyes. Now that he has already killed a half-step Golden Immortal expert of ours, I think we should make him pay for what he did.”

A half-step Golden Immortal spoke, gritting his teeth, seeming as if he had a deep hatred for Jiang Chen.

“Yes, City Lord. If such man is allowed to roam free, he’s going to become a great nuisance to us in the future. Besides, he killed one of our men! If we do nothing about it, we would become the laughing stock of others,” another Golden Immortal added.

“Very well. You all follow me to the outer region to eliminate this brat. We have to make him understand that not everyone could act unscrupulously in Evil Abyss.”

The City Lord stood up abruptly with murderous Qi soaring high up to the sky, seemingly fully prepared to root out this nuisance.

Just as this moment, a man ran into the hall in a flustered way holding a signaling spirit talisman.

“What made you look so nervous?” asked the City Lord with a frown.

“City Lord, this is the spirit talisman sent by Evil City. And it’s for you,” the man spoke. He then handed the spirit talisman respectfully to the city lord.

The city lord didn’t dare show any sign of neglect. Evil City was the central city in Evil Abyss and the place where the Evil Lord resided. Thus, this spirit talisman must be carrying a decree of the Evil Lord.

As a ray of divine sense entered the spirit talisman, it burst in an instant and sent out a vigorous and majestic voice.

“From now on, no one in Evil Abyss shall touch Jiang Chen.”

That was the voice of the Evil Lord. This mere and simple words contained inviolable dignity and reason. It was an order that everyone had to obey.

This sentence represented the Evil Lord’s attitude towards Jiang Chen. Such outcome happened just as Jiang Chen predicted.

Chapter 1256 - The Tranquillity Before the Storm Comes

The disappearance of the spirit talisman along with the Evil Lord's voice turned the atmosphere in the main hall of the prefecture to silence. Everyone, including the city lord, was stupefied, not knowing what exactly had happened.

“What’s going on? Why would the Evil Lord give such an order? He’s telling everybody in the Evil Abyss that he’s going to protect Jiang Chen.”

“What’s the origin of this Jiang Chen? How could he get the protection of the Evil Lord after doing something against the Evil Lord’s will? What is the meaning of this?”

.....

Everyone was puzzled, they couldn't understand why the Evil Lord had given such an order. Based on their understanding, the Evil Lord should have gone mad by now based on what Jiang Chen did in the outer region. Jiang Chen, after all, had completely violated the Evil Lord's decree and ruined the Evil Lord's reputation.

This however did not infuriate the Evil Lord, judging on how the Evil Lord reacted. They believed that their city wasn't the only city that had received the Evil Lord's signalling spirit talisman. To put it in another way, Jiang Chen would be safe and was free to act unscrupulously in Evil Abyss. Because of the support of the Evil Lord, there was no one else that Jiang Chen should fear.

“I have already guessed the reason the Evil Lord sent us this decree.”

The city lord regained his senses and returned to his seat. The Evil Lord's spirit talisman forced him to fully dispel his thoughts of dealing with Jiang Chen. Like he said, no one in the Evil Abyss

would dare to oppose the will of the Evil Lord, because once the Evil Lord decided to get rid of an expert, that expert wouldn't have a chance to live even if he had a hundred lives. He had to admit that he wasn't as capable as Jiang Chen who could win the protection of the Evil Lord even after going against the Evil Lord's will.

“What? Could it be that this Jiang Chen is an acquaintance of the Evil Lord?” someone asked.

“Very unlikely. Didn't you remember the monk that came out during the critical situation? Both the monk and Jiang Chen have the ability to command mighty demonic devils in battle. The Evil Lord must have taken a fancy to such an ability, which explained why he would stand up for them,” said the city lord.

Those who could survive and prosper in Evil Abyss proved that they were no ordinary humans. Given the city lord's intelligence, he had no problem figuring out the key of the matter.

Everyone else in the main hall began to understand the situation after listening to what their city lord had said.

“That's right. The greatest wish of the Evil Lord is to conquer the entire Evil Abyss, but this was undoubtedly very hard to realise. Our race has already been competing against the Evil Clan for ten years, however, we have remained equal. Jiang Chen's emergence must have given the Evil Lord a glimmer of hope. If he could learn the ability to control the entire Evil Clan and make the demonic devils his slaves, it will be far more pleasing to him than to wipe out all of the devils,” another half-step Golden Immortal spoke.

“City Lord, what do we do now then? Are we just going to let this matter rest?” A person asked with slight reluctance.

“What can we do even if we don't let this matter rest? Could it be that we should disobey the Evil Lord's decree? Just let this matter go. Let that Jiang Chen claim his crown in the outer region. It would be fine as long as he doesn't make trouble in the middle

region.”

The city lord waved his hands and spoke in a somewhat helpless tone. Despite his unwillingness to let the matter go, he had no other choice. He couldn't ruin the plan of the Evil Lord unless he wanted a devastating repercussion.

Meanwhile, all the cities in the middle region had also received the Evil Lord's command. During this period, Jiang Chen's name had spread all over the Evil Abyss. Now, almost everyone in the place knew who Jiang Chen was. No one like Jiang Chen had ever appeared in Evil Abyss. No one in Evil Abyss had ever earned the protection of the Evil Lord.

Furthermore, what Jiang Chen did was amazing. Although they had never seen Jiang Chen in person, they knew that he was a peerless and frenzied man who did crazy stuffs. They admired him greatly.

Back in Yi Mo City of the outer region.

Jiang Chen had never left the city together with Tyrant and Big Yellow after unifying all the forces in the outer region. They were waiting for the Evil Lord's call. Unfortunately, there was no sign from the Evil Lord even after they had waited for a month. The whole Evil Abyss had fallen back to its quietness and peace. It could be said that this month was the most peaceful period ever since the invention of the Evil Abyss spatial zone, especially in the outer region, where no fights could be observed. Occasionally, there were one or two demonic devils appearing in the zone, but they were gotten rid of almost immediately.

Tyrant and the other two's hearts began to palpitate, not understanding what the Evil Lord was thinking. Evidently, the current situation wasn't normal.

“Little Chen, what's going on? According to the facts, the Evil Lord should have summoned us to Evil City already, but there's no response from the other side and it has already been a month,” said

Tyrant.

“Indeed. How this Evil Lord thinks is very hard to grasp. He stopped the experts in the middle region from attacking us, but he himself didn’t come to find us. Could it be that he intended to ignore us and let time pass by just like this?”

Big Yellow sighed. He wasn’t able to figure out the real intention of the Evil Lord despite of his cleverness.

Jiang Chen smiled faintly. According to his previous calculation, the Evil Lord should have already come to find them, but there was no sign of him. This however had increased Jiang Chen’s impression of the Evil Lord.

If the Evil Lord came to find them in a hasty manner or used either bribery or threat to force them to hand out the means of subduing the demonic devils, it would make Jiang Chen look down on him. A man who only knew how to act recklessly wouldn’t achieve any great things. Now, it seemed like the Evil Lord hadn’t disappointed him. The Evil Lord was no doubt a man with a calm disposition.

However, thinking about the history of the Evil Abyss, the Evil Lord had already spent ten years in this place. So, spending another dozens of days wouldn’t concern him at all.

“The Evil Lord is observing us,” said Jiang Chen.

“What’s he observing?” asked Tyrant.

“He wants to observe our means more clearly. If there’s no mistake in my calculation, this month of quietness is merely the tranquillity before the storm comes. According to my calculation using the Great Divination Art, it would take at most three days before some kind of great event took place,” said Jiang Chen.

“What kind of great event?” Both Big Yellow’s ears stood upright; he asked curiously.

“It’s hard to tell the specific details of the event, but I’m sure that

it will be within the control of the Evil Lord. We'll just have to wait."

Jiang Chen smiled. The aura he was exuding was as still as Mount Tai. One could never see the slightest expression of nervousness from his face.

Chapter 1257 - The Attack of Demonic Devils

Tyrant and Big Yellow's hearts were still palpitating after hearing what Jiang Chen had said, they had never seen the Evil Lord before and had no understanding of this human ruler. However, Jiang Chen was well-versed in the Great Divination Art and since he had already calculated that a great event would happen soon, they could only wait.

On the third day late at night!

Roar.....

An earth-shattering and lingering roar reverberated through the night sky above Yi Mo City one after another. Momentarily, it seemed like Yi Mo City had fallen into a state of endless chaos.

At this moment, every expert in the city was awakened and alerted. As experts who had lived in the Evil Abyss for quite some time, such roars were not unfamiliar to them, it was precisely the roars of the demonic devils of the Evil Clan.

However, nothing like this had ever happened before because this was where the humans resided; it was a human territory. It had been a long time since they witnessed a large-scale invasion of demonic devils. Something big must have happened for so many demonic devils to emerge in this night all of a sudden.

In the prefecture, Jiang Chen's eyes turned grim.

"Sure enough, it has come. Let's go out and see."

A moment later, he flew out of the prefecture followed by Tyrant and Big Yellow. At the same time, there was also a group of Divine Immortals getting out of their houses. Currently, Yi Mo City was completely surrounded by demonic devils. The entire sky was filled with black devil waves. Incomparably study-looking demonic devils could be found everywhere. Each and every demonic devil was roaring and yelling massively. This scene sent chills down

everyone's soul.

There were at least a hundred demonic devils in this region and their number was still on the rise. New demonic devils kept on materializing unnoticeably like some kind of passageway had been opened, allowing large number of devils to arrive at Yi Mo City.

“What’s happening? Yi Mo City is the territory of humans. Why are there so many demonic devils appearing all of a sudden? What exactly has happened?” someone exclaimed.

The faces of everyone paled with fear, fear that came from their innermost soul. They knew how ferocious and violent every demonic devil was. If they denied that they didn’t fear these savage devils, it would be a lie.

“Little Chen, it seems like this is the method of the Evil Lord,” said Tyrant with a smile.

“Chen Hui!” Jiang Chen shouted.

Chen Hui instantly appeared before Jiang Chen. The current expression on Chen Hui’s face wasn’t good. After staying so long in the Evil Abyss, he already had some encounters with the demonic devils, but the present scene was something that he had seen for the first time. This wasn’t just an ordinary battle, but war. It would be a war between humans and demonic devils.

A war like this always happened in the past, but after half of the Evil Abyss had been conquered by the Evil Lord, nothing like this had ever occurred.

“Is there a passageway that connects to the Evil Clan from here?” asked Jiang Chen.

Chen Hui took a moment to contemplate before his eyes sparkled.

“City Lord, before the arrival of the Evil Lord, the Evil Abyss was dominated by the Evil Clan and to the best of my knowledge, there were plenty of passageways in this spatial zone due to its

instability. After the Evil Lord took over half of the Evil Abyss, he has locked many of the channels by using some kind of means. The fact that so many demonic devils appeared today must be related to the opening of the passageway,” said Chen Hui.

As soon as Chen Hui’s words faded, Lu Sheng flew over with a panicked face and spoke: “Master, a huge number of demonic devils have also appeared in Dark Yang City.”

“What about the status of the other cities?” asked Jiang Chen.

“The other cities are still fine. No presence of demonic devils are detected yet,” answered Lu Sheng.

After listening to what Lu Sheng had said, Jiang Chen suddenly understood the meaning behind it, revealing a smile at the corner of his mouth. With his smartness and wisdom, he had already figured out the main factor of the problem.

“Little Chen, what’s going on here?” Tyrant asked.

“This incident is already very obvious. The Evil Lord purposely opened two passageways just to watch our true ability. Tyrant, go and guard Dark Yang City and kill all the demonic devils. Remember, keep their corpses for me. I have to thank the Evil Lord for this treat,” Jiang Chen said.

The situation was clear. The Evil Lord still had doubts about Jiang Chen and Tyrant’s means of handling the demonic devils. This explained why he opened these two passageways. His intention was to observe Jiang Chen and Tyrant’s true abilities.

Such a situation was extremely favourable to Jiang Chen. As his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was in need of demonic devils’ blood and Qi essence, and he couldn’t take the risk of intruding into the Evil Clan’s territory by himself again, these demonic devils in front of them was precisely the nourishment he needed.

More importantly, Jiang Chen’s foundation had already been fortified during the month that they had waited and it wouldn’t be

a problem for the pagoda to advance another level after eliminating all of these demonic devils. So naturally, he would have to thank the Evil Lord for sending these resources to his pocket.

“Understood.”

Tyrant was a clever man. He already understand what Jiang Chen meant. Since the Evil Lord wanted to see their abilities, they should present the best of their abilities. Tyrant’s Buddha Sect cultivation technique, especially the Edifying Light was the natural enemy of these demonic devils. This would definitely open the eyes of the Evil Lord.

After Tyrant and Big Yellow left for Dark Yang City to get rid of all those ferocious devils, Jiang Chen remained, standing guard over Yi Mo City. The more-than-a-month of waiting was about to make his body rusty if he didn’t take this opportunity to move and flex his muscles.

Roar...

The roars of the demonic devils became even more horrifying, like an endless wave, sweeping through the city. In just a few moments, the number of demonic devils had already reached above a thousand. Large number of them began advancing, breaking the city gate and into the city.

“What should we do now, City Lord?” asked Chen Hui.

It was his first time seeing such a scene. So, it was only right for him to be tensed.

“Kill them!”

Jiang Chen ignored Chen Hui’s question. He summoned the Heavenly Saint Sword and turned into his dragon-form, he then lunged forward. Besides him, the demonic chief, Ah Da and Ah Er also advanced forward to meet the group of vicious enemies. In fact, having experienced many crazy and intense battles, such a

battle was nothing to Jiang Chen.

Whoosh!

The Heavenly Saint Sword was swung, producing a brilliant ray of light as if a golden heavenly river hanging in the darkness. Five to six mighty demonic devils had been killed in one slash. Two among them were early Divine Immortal devils, but their sturdy physiques were just as fragile as the other demonic devils before Jiang Chen.

Chapter 1258 - Heaven Defying Means

The demonic devils which were slain didn't fall from the sky, but were absorbed by some unknown force. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda shook slightly after receiving the blood and Qi essence. Its seventeenth level began to form.

Jiang Chen's attack shocked a lot of people. Each and every one of them had their mouths wide open. During the battle more than a month ago, although Jiang Chen had unstoppably conquered every city in the outer region, he never really displayed his skill, which was why many hadn't seen his attacks before and had no knowledge about this combat strength. Judging from the surface, Jiang Chen was after all only a mid Heaven Immortal young man. So how powerful could he actually be?

However, as soon as they saw Jiang Chen's attack, it seemed as if they were struck by lightning. The early Divine Immortal demonic devils were totally no match for him. They had to admit that this was truly their first time seeing such a scary genius.

As a matter of fact, not only were early Divine Immortal demonic devils a vulnerable opponent to Jiang Chen, he could even kill mid Divine Immortal demonic devils with a single slash. After all, Jiang Chen has already transformed into his dragon-form. If he used the Great Divination Art, it would even be possible for him to fight against a late Divine Immortal demonic devil. In addition, he could also suppress all these devils completely. The devils wouldn't be able to exert their full strength while fighting against Jiang Chen. This was the reason he was able to subdue the demonic chief.

Roar...

The demonic chief and the twin barbaric bulls were also like frenzied killing demons. They broke directly into the enemy's main forces and started an intense massacre. The demonic devils spared no effort to defend against the advances of the two bulls.

While confronting the demonic chief, many of the devils were puzzled. They couldn't understand why the demonic chief was charging and killing them. He was supposed to be standing on their side. Nothing like this had ever happened across the entire Evil Abyss.

The demonic devils of the Evil Clan were extremely ferocious and had their own pride. There was no way that a human could make them yield, let alone the chief of their tribe.

However, this was an irrefutable fact. Despite their inability to understand, they had to defend against the attack with all their might, otherwise, many more of their comrades would die in the hands of this demonic chief.

The battle was intense. Every demonic devil that was killed was completely absorbed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, improving Jiang Chen's power. This was an extremely gruesome scene, the corpses of the dead disappeared right after they died.

“Slaughter them!”

Chen Hui shouted loudly and charged forward with a group of Divine Immortal experts. The main combat strength amongst their group was the few late Divine Immortal experts. Now that their city lord had already charged into battle, they had no reason to stay behind looking like a coward.

Large amount of blood and Qi essence was being absorbed. The exuberant blood and Qi essence of the Divine Immortal demonic devils in particular had brought too much benefits to Jiang Chen. The whole seventeenth floor of the pagoda was condensed very quickly and the number of dragon marks in his body had increased by a large amount. His cultivation was constantly moving forward to the late Heaven Immortal realm.

A large number of demonic devils died in Jiang Chen's hands, but the amount of demonic devils appearing in the sky above Yi Mo City didn't seem to decrease. However, this was what Jiang Chen

wanted. The more the demonic devils, the better. Every demonic devil was a nourishment to him and to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, which was why the demonic devils were one of his greatest targets in Evil Abyss. And since the Evil Lord had provided such a great help, Jiang Chen would naturally have to cherish it.

“I can’t continue killing this way. The Evil Lord must be watching the scene now. I have to show the ability that the Evil Lord has been hoping to see,” muttered Jiang Chen.

He was afraid that his power had already astonished the Evil Lord, but he knew that this wasn’t what the Evil Lord wanted. What the Evil Lord wanted to see was Jiang Chen’s Edifying Light. Jiang Chen was no fool and naturally knew what to do in such a situation.

“Edifying Light.”

Jiang Chen spoke lightly, shooting out a brilliant serpent-like edifying light that went through a dozen of demonic devils. These demonic devils weren’t very strong, the strongest was an early Divine Immortal and the weakest was merely at the Heaven Immortal realm.

After being edified, their eyes instantly turned tame and gentle.

“Kill them.”

Jiang Chen sent out a command. The dozen edified devils didn’t dare show any neglect. Immediately, they turned and lunged at their kin. This abrupt change threw the entire demonic devil forces into chaos. Many of them were yelling unpleasantly, not knowing what actually happened.

This scene changed their impression of Jiang Chen once more. What they saw was their enemies killing each other, and this had greatly reduced the pressure coming from the enemy forces. Although they had no idea what Jiang Chen did to the dozen of demonic devils, they had to admit that such a skill was truly

heaven defying.

“*Roar...* What’s going on?”

The demonic devils had gone mad when they saw their comrades which were fighting alongside with them suddenly turned against them in the next moment. This had given the unedified demonic devils the urge to cough up blood.

Roar...

Unfortunately, the demonic devils who were edified by Jiang Chen only recognized Jiang Chen as their master. If Jiang Chen wanted them to kill, they would never hesitate even if their target was their own parents. Because of the limitation of his cultivation base, Jiang Chen wouldn’t be able to edify too many devils. However, as his cultivation base advanced and his Ancestral Dragon Pagoda condensing another level, the number of demonic devils he could edify would naturally increase. The moment he could edify devils in huge bulks, he could win the war without even fighting.

When the demonic devils finally realized that those edified demonic devils were no longer their allies, they brushed off their puzzled thoughts and fought back.

Very quickly, a dozen of the edified demonic devils were gotten rid of, but before the other demonic devils could regain their senses, nearly twenty of their comrades had already been edified. Likewise, they spun around and lunged frenziedly at their own kind.

“My God! What has City Lord done to them? How terrifying!”

“That’s right. Such a skill is truly heaven defying. No wonder the Evil Lord took notice of him. If the battle continued in such a way, the devil army is going to be defeated soon.”

.....

No one wasn’t shocked by it. At this point, every one of them had

already admired Jiang Chen so much that they wanted to prostrate before him.

Chapter 1259 - Late Heaven Immortal realm

Roar... *Roar...*

The sky above Yi Mo City was filled with earth-shattering roars and intense clashes. A large number of demonic devils were constantly emerging, but they were also disappearing like clouds being swept away by a gale, because Jiang Chen was unnoticeably using the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and sucking all of the leftovers in battle. However, the pagoda was like a bottomless hole. After the seventeenth level was fully condensed, the eighteenth level immediately began to form. Tremendous amount of energy had been channelled from the pagoda into Jiang Chen's body, stimulating the formation of new dragon marks in his Qi Sea.

In Dark Yang City, Tyrant used the same methods as Jiang Chen – edifying a large number of demonic devils, he then commanded the edified devils to kill their own kind. The reason he displayed such a skill was also for the Evil Lord to see. Since the Evil Lord had opened two passageways, he would definitely pay close attention to Dark Yang City as well.

After a great number of demonic devils died, Tyrant collected and kept all of their corpses. He knew that these corpses would bring Jiang Chen some benefits, so he would never waste it.

Such a large-scale of war had never happened in Evil Abyss for a long period of time. Ever since the Evil Lord reigned half of the Evil Abyss, there were only occasional clashes between humans and demonic devils, it wasn't comparable to this kind of war.

In the inner region, inside Evil City was a black-robed man with a straight figure. His body radiated a Qi that was like a sword that could penetrate through the sky. He was very young, seemingly about thirty years old. His bright eyes and his sharp facial features gave him a handsome and attractive appearance.

By looking at him, one could tell that he was a devilish man. If

one looked closely, one could even observe the ambitious expression in his eyes. Standing beside this man were several experts. They were firm and motionless, making sure that they didn't breathe too loudly. Taking a closer look, the cultivation base of these people had already reached the terrifying Golden Immortal realm. The weakest among them was a mid Golden Immortal expert whereas the strongest was a late Golden Immortal expert.

However, the cultivation base of the devilish man was the scariest. There was a thick spatial airflow constantly drifting around his body. This indicated spatial strength. It proved that this man had already mastered the Spatial law and was a true Immortal King expert, unlike any half-step Immortal King experts.

There was only a single mighty Immortal King across the entire Evil Abyss. And there was also only one person who occupied the top of the hierarchy in Evil City. Combining these two facts together, the man, needless to say, is the Evil Lord.

That was right. He's the Evil Lord. His young appearance and age were always beyond the imagination of people who hadn't met him. Currently, there was a huge mirror hanging in front of the Evil Lord. The mirror was the size of 9 to 12 meters, just like a screen.

Everyone's attention was focused into the mirror where it was divided into two scenes, one for Yi Mo City and the other for Dark Yang City.

Just as Jiang Chen speculated, the situation in Yi Mo and Dark Yang City were planned by the Evil Lord. At this moment, not only were the other Golden Immortal experts astounded by the scenes in the mirror, but also the Evil Lord. Their eyes were continuously spewing out brilliant light.

“What a good Jiang Chen! He could actually give me such a huge surprise. His potential talent has exceeded mine. He has such a

terrifying combat strength even though he's merely a Heaven Immortal expert. I'm afraid that even those geniuses of the major powers in the central region of Ethereal Immortal Domain are no match for him."

The Evil Lord revealed a trace of a smile, he couldn't help praising Jiang Chen. His current expression wasn't the same as Tian Muyun's. His eyes were full of admiration when he looked at Jiang Chen whereas Tian Muyun's were filled with envy.

"Lord, I wonder what kind of technique this Jiang Chen and that monk used to continuously make those demonic devils listen to their commands and make them kill their own kind. Such a technique is truly heaven defying."

"That's right. I think this should be a technique from the Buddha Sect, the sect that has always been the bane of the devil race. However, Jiang Chen apparently isn't a member of the Buddha Sect. So how could he use such a skill? Look at that ray of light. Every demonic devil is subdued as the light passes them. That's truly terrifying."

"Lord, if we are able to acquire this technique and power, we will be able to subdue the entire Evil Clan and your undertaking will then be accomplished."

.....

The shock that the Golden Immortal experts felt had been compounding even until now. They knew all too well about the scariness of the demonic devils after their countless clashes with the Evil Clan. However, the scene ahead was truly unimaginable to them. It was totally out of their imagination.

"I have once met an eminent monk of the White Dragon Temple. He told me that there was a supreme scripture named the Edifying Light in Buddha Sect. He said that the light was the natural enemy of all kinds of evils. It seemed like the ray of light that Jiang Chen and the monk used is the Edifying Light," said the Evil Lord.

Based on what he said, it implied that he had an extraordinary identity and status in the outside world, no ordinary person could get in touch with the monks of the White Dragon Temple of the Ethereal Immortal Domain.

“Lord, since the two of them have such powerful techniques in their possession, why don’t we capture them and demand them to hand over the method to cultivate the Edifying Light?” a late Golden Immortal expert said.

“You surely know nothing about it. The Edifying Light is a sacred technique of Buddha Sect. Only those who are fated can practice such a skill. Of all the eminent monks in the White Dragon Temple, none of them could cast this spell. This little monk must have a very deep connection with the Buddha which explained why he was able to cultivate the Edifying Light. Based on my observation of Jiang Chen, he is a man with great fortune and will have lots of miraculous encounters. As for me, even if I obtained the method of cultivating the Edifying Light, I won’t be able succeed in the process,” said the Evil Lord. Apparently, he was someone who wasn’t just aware of someone else’s strength, but also his own limitations.

“So what plan does the Lord have in mind now?” someone asked.

“We absolutely can’t make Jiang Chen our enemy. This man’s incredible luck would make his future boundless and immeasurable. I can’t complete my great undertaking in Evil Abyss without the help of these two. I will close the passageways in a while. I will then personally summon them to Evil City after they have finished their massacre,” said the Evil Lord.

The reason why he didn’t look for Jiang Chen was because he was still sceptical about Jiang Chen’s ability. Now that he had seen it with his own eyes, he was filled with shock and joy. To put it bluntly, Jiang Chen’s appearance had allowed him to see a new hope and light. With Jiang Chen and Tyrant’s help, he would certainly be able to take control of the whole Evil Abyss.

Suddenly, the passageways in Yi Mo City and Dark Yang City were closed. The demonic devils of the Evil Clan stopped appearing. It was only a matter of time before all the remaining devils were gotten rid of by Jiang Chen and Tyrant. At this time, the number of dragon marks in Jiang Chen's body had already reached 600 000 which was precisely the mark of breaking through to the late Heaven Immortal realm.

Chapter 1260 - 630 000 Dragon Marks

Hu... *Hu...*

Jiang Chen's Qi Sea began to roar. Enormous amount of Immortal Meta Stones were being refined and absorbed. The massive number of Immortal Meta Stones that Ouyang He had left him could sustain his consumption until the Golden Immortal realm. As such, he wouldn't have to worry about shortages of Immortal Meta Stones.

600 000 dragon marks had already been fully condensed out, pushing his cultivation to the late Heaven Immortal realm, but it wasn't over yet as there were still plenty of demonic devils. After absorbing numerous corpses of demonic devils, the nineteenth level of the pagoda started forming. According to the current rate of development, the nineteenth level of the pagoda would be fully condensed out soon.

"City Lord, the passageway has been closed."

Chen Hui spoke with a face full of delight. Even though it was an intense battle, it had brought him unimaginable excitement.

"I know."

Jiang Chen showed a trace of smirk at the corner of his mouth. How could he not understand what was going on? It seemed like the Evil Lord had already achieved his own goal and had seen what he wanted to see. It would be pointless if the passageway was kept opened because this would arouse the notice of the higher ups of the Evil Clan. The moment the super powerful demonic devil reached Jiang Chen's city, Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to handle it.

Roar... *Roar...*

The remaining demonic devils were still roaring furiously, at the same time, new demonic devils were being edified to eliminate

their own kind. In such a battle, even Jiang Chen himself couldn't help feeling great. Using the Edifying Light to deal with those demonic devils was absolutely a flawless move.

A dozen of minutes later, all the demonic devils above Yi Mo City were annihilated, but to everyone's surprise, there wasn't a single stench of blood flowing in the air and not even the corpses of the devils were seen, it was like they had just vanished in the air, like they had never appeared. However, when they recalled Jiang Chen's special means of absorbing the devils' corpses, it sent chills down their spine.

That was right, it was a gruesome scene. No matter how smart they were, they wouldn't be able to find an explanation for Jiang Chen's terrifying means.

"Chen Hui, those demonic devils won't come here again. I want you to fix the broken buildings and treat the wounded." Jiang Chen looked over at Chen Hui and spoke.

"Yes, City Lord."

Chen Hui didn't dare show the slightest bit of neglect to his master. Even if he wasn't planted with the divine sense seed like Lu Sheng, Jiang Chen's power had already planted a seed in his innermost soul, constantly warning him to not have a single thought of betrayal in his head.

Jiang Chen's body flashed and vanished. His next target was Dark Yang City. The war there should have already ended by now, and that means there were numerous devils' corpses waiting to be absorbed. He definitely couldn't miss such humongous amount of energy.

When Jiang Chen arrived at Dark Yang City, as he had expected, the battle had already ended. Tyrant and Big Yellow had already gotten rid of everything. The air and land were filled with a nose-stinging stench of blood and a mountainous pile of corpses.

“Little Chen, you have advanced once more.”

Tyrant felt incomparably delighted after noticing that Jiang Chen had already advanced to the late Heaven Immortal realm. He understood Jiang Chen very well. He knew that Jiang Chen was a super abnormal dude who could kill and advance so easily as if he was just eating rice, and every advancement he made represented another terrifying level.

Jiang Chen wasted no time with Tyrant. Immediately, he summoned the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. A giant invisible portal wrapped around the mountainous pile of bodies, and in just a few blinks, all of the bodies disappeared and were completely absorbed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

A buzzing sound started to echo from the pagoda and into the void for around 15 minutes before it came to a halt. The nineteenth level of the pagoda had already been completed and half of the twentieth level had been condensed. Meanwhile, the number of dragon marks in Jiang Chen's body had reached 630 000; only 20 000 more dragon marks to advance to the half-step Divine Immortal realm.

With Jiang Chen's current strength, he could already kill late Divine Immortal experts if he used his dragon form. If he also used the Great Divination Art, he could even fight a half-step Golden Immortal opponent. They were afraid that only Jiang Chen had such a heaven defying and terrifying combat strength in this world.

The outside of the pagoda was radiating an ancient bloody-red light. Each and every dragon mark on the surface of the pagoda became clearer and deeper. The current state of the pagoda seemed incomparably divine. Anyone who saw this would feel a kind of spiritual pressure from it.

“Presently, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda could only be used as a

means to escape or hide. It has other abilities that are not discovered yet. If I'm not mistaken, of the 99 levels of the pagoda, it only can ignite one ability every 33 levels. Therefore, there's still a long way to go."

Jiang Chen sighed. He had always been paying close attention to the power of the pagoda and was filled with anticipation. He believed that the pagoda would never disappoint him in the end. The Ninety-Ninth level was the peak level of the pagoda, and thirty-three level was the first step that he had to reach. As the dragon transformation skill and the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda were interlinked, he could basically guess that as long as the condensation reached thirty-three level, a new ability would be unlocked and this would surely astound him.

The forces of the demonic devils that attacked Dark Yang City was humongous. If it wasn't because of some delay that caused the loss of essence, it could've helped Jiang Chen's pagoda to condense out the twentieth level or even push Jiang Chen to the half-step Divine Immortal realm.

However, Jiang Chen was not in a hurry. In the path of cultivation, he would never let greed and audacity cloud his judgement. He would never forget to fortify his foundation along the way. He was already quite delighted with the benefits he received today. The war with the demonic devils of the Evil Clan had just begun, there were still abundant resources that would help push Jiang Chen's cultivation to a terrifying level.

"Little Chen, what should we do now?" asked Tyrant.

"We just have to wait. Wait for the Evil Lord to come looking for us, or summon us to Evil City," replied Jiang Chen, he then led Big Yellow and Tyrant into Dark Yang City. Now that the entire outer region had become his territory, he could go wherever he wanted. He was the absolute emperor that no one could defy.

While waiting in Dark Yang City, Jiang Chen used the Great

Divination Art to calculate the situation in One-Line-Sky. He had been away from One-Line-Sky for more than a month. So he wanted to calculate and see if he could get any clues about the situation outside. This was the right time for him to test the power of the Great Divination Art.

Chapter 1261 - Evil City

“What are you doing?” asked Big Yellow curiously.

“I’m circulating the Great Divination Art. It had never made any progress since reaching the Heavenly Vision realm. Now that we are in this strange spatial zone, I wonder if I could divine anything in One-Line-Sky,” answered Jiang Chen.

Although he was in Evil Abyss, his mind was still in One-Line-Sky. He knew that it was only a matter of time before he returned to One-Line-Sky. To him, the Evil Abyss was only a bump on the road. Tian Muyun was still in Skycloud Pavilion, and he was responsible to root out that evil man.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

As the Great Divination Art circulated, the uranus point between his eyes began to buzz and the flickering of light made Tyrant who was standing beside him marvell.

“How come this bastard knows how to do anything? Now that he has even learned the Great Divination Art, I have no idea what he’s going to achieve in the future,” said Tyrant with admiration.

Although he had deep Buddha nature and the potential to possess the Bright Buddha Body, he was still inferior compared to Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen was a man with great fortune and it was only a matter of time before he became the most superior being.

Jiang Chen was an omnipotent existence and the word genius absolutely wouldn’t be enough to describe him. Everything that was difficult would instantly turn into a piece of cake in front of Jiang Chen. Either it was combat technique, cultivation law or any domain skill, once he got in contact with it, he would be able to master it with extraordinary pace. Apart from ‘speechless’, there was no other adjective that could be used to describe such an abnormal genius.

A few minutes later, Jiang Chen opened his eyes wide. Two rays of brilliant light shot out from his eyes, trembling the void ahead.

“What have you calculated?”

A glimmer came from Big Yellow’s eyes. Based on his deep understanding of Jiang Chen, he was able to tell from Jiang Chen’s reaction that Jiang Chen must have calculated something big.

“Sure enough, something big has taken place in One-Line-Sky,” said Jiang Chen.

“What kind of big event?” asked Tyrant curiously.

“I don’t know. My Great Divination Art has only reached Heavenly Vision realm. My divination ability isn’t that strong yet. I can only divine a general vision of something. The Great Divination Art shows that something big is going to happen in One-Line-Sky. And if we return at that time, we are going to get lots of benefits,” replied Jiang Chen.

He wasn’t able to calculate the specific details of the event but he knew that something big was about to happen, and if he missed it, the losses would be humongous.

“So you are going back?” asked Big Yellow.

“Of course, I must participate in that big event. After meeting the Evil Lord, I will find ways to convince him to open the passageway for me to return to One-Line-Sky,” said Jiang Chen based on the fact that there wasn’t any major matter happening in Evil Abyss for the time being, and it would be impossible for him to confront the entire Evil Clan with his current strength.

Swoosh...

Just as Jiang Chen finished speaking, a figure suddenly emerged in the main hall. This figure moved extremely fast and stealthy, like a specter. Jiang Chen raised his head and saw one smiling old man standing in front of him. This old man’s cultivation was profound. He was a mid Golden Immortal expert.

Needless to say, this old man was sent by the Evil Lord. Ordering a mid Golden Immortal expert to greet them was considered a very respectful gesture on the Evil Lord's side. Apparently, this could tell that the Evil Lord attached great importance to Jiang Chen and Tyrant.

"Jiang Chen, I was sent by the Evil Lord to bring you to the Evil City," the old man spoke in a warm and approachable way.

"Very well, please lead the way, elder."

Jiang Chen stood up from his sit. As both parties had already known each other's purpose, there was nothing else they should be pretentious about. When the Evil Lord wanted to invite someone, the person should oblige. Even if Jiang Chen didn't know about the Evil Lord's purpose of invitation, he should accept the invitation unconditionally if he wanted to establish a foothold in the Evil Abyss.

"Hehe... Junior brother is really a man of excellence for conquering the whole outer region in such a short period of time. The Evil Lord not only didn't have any complaints about you, he also want to invite you to Evil City. I'm afraid such exception has never taken place in the Evil Abyss."

The elder chuckled and spoke with respect and admiration. Despite being a Golden Immortal expert, as long as he wasn't an idiot, he would be able to discern Jiang Chen's massive potential. Besides, Jiang Chen had already caught the attention of the Evil Lord. As such, befriending someone like this was going to be beneficial to his future.

"Elder is being courteous. Junior is honored to be given this chance," said Jiang Chen with a smile.

Though the elder looked approachable and nice, he knew that it was merely a facade and that everyone who survived in the Evil Abyss was a vicious being.

Following behind the elder was Jiang Chen, Big Yellow, Tyrant and the two girls, Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying. The top priority for Jiang Chen right now was to send these two girls to the outside world, as this place was too dangerous for them.

Evil City was located at the heart of the Evil Abyss. It was a vast city. The variegated scratches strewn on the city walls indicated its age and marks of battles.

The vast Evil City seemed a thousand miles wide which was about the size of an ordinary state. Even from afar, they could feel the city's noble aura, but beneath the aura was the Qi of evil and massacre. As a matter of fact, such Qi would never be absent in anywhere in Evil Abyss as it existed in the origin of the Evil Abyss, unchangeable.

The Evil Lord might be able to cause great changes in the spatial zone, but he wouldn't be able to alter the origin of the place.

“This is a huge city!”

Yan Qingcheng couldn't help but exclaim. She had been living in Yan City since young and that city of hers was too small compared to Evil City. So it was logical that she was shocked by its size and scale.

“No humans in the outer region can enter Evil City so easily. You people are the first who have such privilege,” said the elder with a smile.

What he said wasn't excessive. This was after all the Evil Abyss, the place where the Evil Lord lived. Not just the experts of the outer region, but also the experts of middle region would find it extremely difficult to enter Evil City. Jiang Chen and his friends indeed was the special case of the special cases.

Chapter 1262 - Straight to the Point

“Junior Brother Jiang Chen, the lord is waiting for you in the city. Let’s go,” said the elder with a smile.

“Alright.” Jiang Chen nodded.

A group of people flew into Evil City, towards the prefecture. In Evil City, only Golden Immortal experts had the privilege to fly above the city. So Jiang Chen and his friends were an exception, and with such different identities they would naturally receive different type of treatment.

The prefecture was grand and spacious. Every corner of the prefecture manifested nobility. After Jiang Chen and the others arrived, several pretty and coquettish-looking women greeted Jiang Chen and treated him as if he was a distinguished guest.

“Junior Brother Jiang Chen, let these two ladies rest here while we head to meet the lord,” said the elder.

Jiang Chen nodded; then turned to Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying. “Qingcheng, Sister Ying, both of you rest here first. I will be back when things are done.”

“En, be careful Big Brother Jiang.”

Yan Qingcheng nodded. Although she and Huang Ying weren’t satisfied with such a decision, the two of them knew their own limitations, they weren’t qualified to meet the Evil Lord. If it wasn’t for Jiang Chen, they wouldn’t even have the chance to step in here.

“Don’t worry.”

Jiang Chen patted Yan Qingcheng’s shoulder. He had a feeling in his heart that he couldn’t put into words. He knew that this girl was infatuated with him, but he had no idea how he should deal with her infatuated heart. For the time being, he would rather place it aside first, and focus all of his attention on cultivation. As

for the matter of relationship, he would only take it one step at a time.

Under the lead of the elder, Jiang Chen and the other two reached a hidden living room. Then the elder left. It seemed like the Evil Lord wanted to see them personally.

“Junior is Jiang Chen. Greet Evil Lord.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at the front door instead of immediately rushing into the room.

“Come in.”

An incomparably clear voice was heard from the inside. Then, the door opened. Rays of light shot out from inside. Jiang Chen took a deep breath and led Tyrant and Big Yellow into the room.

The scene inside changed immediately as they entered the living room. The surrounding was filled with variegated spatial aura. It turned out that the inside of this living room was actually an independent spatial zone. Obviously, this spatial zone was created by the Evil Lord himself and was fused together with the living room, but it definitely wouldn't be easy for any outsider to enter it.

Creak!

The door was closed. A ghostly figure appeared in front of them. He was tall and well proportioned. He wore a black robe, and the smile on his sharp face was extremely charming.

No doubt, he was the Evil Lord.

While Jiang Chen was studying the Evil Lord, the Evil Lord was also studying him. Simultaneously, both of their eyes showed astonishment.

There was no way that Jiang Chen wouldn't be surprised by the Evil Lord. In his imagination, the Evil Lord should be at least 40 or 50 years old and have a buff body. He had never imagined that the Evil Lord was so young, almost as young as Tian Muyun.

Because of this, Jiang Chen's evaluation of the Evil Lord raised once more. A man who could attain the Immortal King realm at such a young age proved that he had a terrifying talent compared to Tian Muyun. Additionally, the Evil Lord was able to conquer half of the Evil Abyss. From this aspect alone, it already showed that the Evil Lord was absolutely not a rash person. This had won Jiang Chen's admiration.

As for the Evil Lord, although he had witnessed Jiang Chen's ability before via the mirror, he couldn't help but be astonished upon seeing Jiang Chen in person. This was because Jiang Chen was too young and the Qi of nobility was emanating from his body. He could feel that this Qi was similar to the Qi of the son of the Heavens, a superior, high and mighty noble being.

Jiang Chen was not the one that astounded the Evil Lord, even Tyrant and Big Yellow had surprised him. One should know that if they were replaced by some other people or even Golden Immortal experts, they would be obsequious and wouldn't even dare to exhale comfortably. These two men and the dog were so composed, totally incomparable to any of those ordinary experts. This alone was enough to show that they were beings who had seen the world.

"Jiang Chen, you are not the same as my imagination," said the Evil Lord with a smile, without showing any sign of superiority.

"Lord is also very different from what I had expected, but because of this, you have earned much of my admiration." Jiang Chen spoke with smile as well.

It was ridiculous joke when a Heaven Immortal youth said that the Immortal King Evil Lord was admirable. They were afraid that only Jiang Chen had the nerve to speak such a thing.

Despite that, the Evil Lord wasn't angered, he could see that Jiang Chen wasn't an ordinary person. He knew that people like Jiang Chen had their own pride. The Evil Lord felt proud when he was appreciated by an extraordinary man. Sometimes, the feeling

of radiating admiration to someone was far better than radiating fear.

“Jiang Chen, you’re a smart man. You should already know why I summoned you here for.” The Evil Lord said straightforwardly.

“Of course, Lord has arrived in Evil Abyss ten years ago with the purpose of conquering the entire Evil Abyss and wiping out the whole Evil Clan, but because the demonic devils being deeply rooted in here and the environment is extremely favourable to them, it was impossible to get rid of them completely. But unexpectedly, we have the skills to subdue those demonic devils of the Evil Clan and our skills could even greatly suppress them. As such, as long as we cooperate, the wish of unifying the whole Evil Abyss will be realized soon,” said Jiang Chen.

He was a person who didn’t like to beat around the bush, and speaking in an honest manner was his favourite.

“Cooperate? Aren’t you all afraid that I will force you all to hand over the technique of subduing the demonic devils? One should know that if I’m able to master that technique, I don’t need any of you to interfere. And if I insist on my decision, you all don’t have a choice,” the Evil Lord said interestedly.

“Hehe! If Lord really had such an idea, then we wouldn’t be standing here talking. We wouldn’t be able to resist if you wanted to attack us, but Lord understands that even if you got this technique, you won’t be able to cultivate it.”

Jiang Chen chuckled. There was no need to hide his real intention while talking to a wise person.

Chapter 1263 - Yang Bufan

“Hahaha...”

After listening to what Jiang Chen had said, the Evil Lord burst into laughter whilst looking at Jiang Chen with admiration. This young man had left him an extremely deep impression. Wisdom, bravery, composure and all the qualities that a successful cultivator supposed to have were projected out from Jiang Chen's demeanour.

“Jiang Chen, you're a wise man and I like making friends with wise people. You're right about one thing. Your skill should have originated from the supreme Edifying Light of Buddha Sect. I realized this when I saw the little monk. I knew some eminent monks in White Dragon Temple, so I knew about the Edifying Light. As I'm not fated to cultivate Buddha Sect's techniques, I won't be able to acquire it even if you told me how to cultivate it. As such, what I need is your assistance,” said the Evil Lord.

The fact that the Evil Lord could discern the origin of the Edifying Light surprised Tyrant and Jiang Chen internally. It changed their view of the Evil Lord once more.

It seems like this Evil Lord isn't an ordinary person, a normal expert won't have a chance of seeing an eminent monk of the White Dragon Temple. But I kinda have a pleasant impression for this man, perhaps he's a person worth making friends with.

Jiang Chen spoke in his heart. The Evil Lord had indirectly unveiled his identity in the outside world. Even in Evil Abyss, the Evil Lord was a highly dignified and supreme being. So, building a good rapport with such a man would be beneficial to him.

Currently, Jiang Chen already had a basic idea that the Evil Lord treated this Evil Abyss as merely a place for tough-training, a training that required a longer period of time to be completed. Once the Evil Lord accomplished this venture, there would be

nothing left for him to dominate. By that time, he would leave for sure.

The Evil Lord and Jiang Chen fell into the same category. They were the kind of people that always seek challenges and would never stop until they overcome them. Currently, the demonic devils was the Evil Lord's biggest challenge. Once he succeeded in this challenge, he would continue to look for more challenges.

“That's right. You and I are partners now. You want to use my skill to fulfil your wish of unifying the entire Evil Abyss. As for me, I cultivate a special technique wherein I can enhance my strength by absorbing the blood and Qi essence of devils, so the demonic devils are going to be my greatest nourishment in my cultivation. Therefore, our cooperation is a win-win situation,” said Jiang Chen, without attempting to hide any facts.

Although he couldn't share the matter of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to the Evil Lord, he could only tell that he had the ability to absorb the blood and Qi essence of demonic devils as he believed that the Evil Lord must have seen everything that had happened in Yi Mo and Dark Yang City.

“Very well. Working with smart people is an exhilarating thing. Jiang Chen, I have to say that you are the most powerful young genius that I've ever met. Perhaps we can be friends in the future. My real name is Yang Bufan. The title Evil Lord was given by the people after I arrived here,” replied the Evil Lord with a smile.

There were only few in the entire Evil Abyss who knew about his real name. The fact that he told Jiang Chen his real name proved that he was sincere in making friends with this young junior.

“Brother Yang sure is forthright.”

Jiang Chen clasped his fists at Yang Bufan. This had improved his impression of the Evil Lord once more. Both of them were smart people. They both knew that they needed no indirect speeches -- they had no barriers. This kind of people was what

Jiang Chen liked to make friends with the most.

Across the entire Evil Abyss no one, including those late Golden Immortal experts, had called the Evil Lord ‘Brother Yang’. Jiang Chen had the nerve to call the Evil Lord so casually because he didn’t feel that his status was lower than Yang Bufan. As for their gap in cultivation, he was confident that it was only a matter of time before he reached Yang Bufan’s level or even surpass him.

In the same way, Yang Bufan didn’t show any signs of unpleasantness towards Jiang Chen’s way of addressing him. Instead, he felt delighted. In Evil Abyss, he had been used to people being afraid of him and that kind of high and mighty feeling had placed him at a lonely height. Jiang Chen’s emergence on the other hand had given him another kind of feeling. He believed that given Jiang Chen’s talent, Jiang Chen surely had an immeasurable future. As such, being a ‘brother’ of Jiang Chen wasn’t a humiliation to him.

“Brother Yang, although we have already agreed to cooperate, I’m still too weak to be of any help if we go to war with the Evil Clan now. So we need a long-term plan if we want to exterminate the Evil Clan,” said Jiang Chen, harking back to the main topic. At this point, it was necessary for him to voice out the critical factor of the matter.

“I’m aware of this. I know that exterminating the Evil Clan couldn’t be done in a short period of time. I don’t mind waiting a little longer given that I’ve already waited for ten years here. I will do my best to provide you with the greatest help to boost your strength,” Yang Bufan said.

Given his wisdom, he was naturally able to grasp what Jiang Chen meant. To him, time was no longer an issue, the most important thing for him now was to help Jiang Chen boost his cultivation. Since he had already decided to make Jiang Chen his friend, he would show his utmost sincerity to this new friend.

“To be frank Brother Yang, I’m also a master in the art of divination and have seen that something big will take place in One-Line-Sky. I would like to make a trip back first. I have also calculated that I may obtain some kind of rare benefit this time. So I hope that Brother Yang could help open the passageway to One-Line-Sky for me to return first. Once the matter over there is over, I’ll be back immediately,” said Jiang Chen.

This had been his greatest objective after he arrived in this place. If it wasn’t because of the divination art, he was afraid that he wouldn’t be able to come back, the Evil Abyss was no doubt a great place to improve his cultivation.

And since he had already divined the situation in One-Line-Sky, he had to return to find out what it was, otherwise he wouldn’t be at ease.

“Oh? Brother Jiang wants to return?”

Yang Bufan seemed surprised as he hadn’t expected Jiang Chen to leave at this moment.

“Rest assured Brother Yang, Tyrant and Big Yellow will stay here to assist you and to take note of the recent movement of the Evil Clan. After annihilating many demonic devils in Yi Mo and Dark Yang city, I’m afraid that it had already stirred up the other demonic devils in the Evil Clan,” said Jiang Chen.

In order to reassure Yang Bufan and avoid creating any grudges inside of him, he must leave Tyrant and Big Yellow here.

“Alright. In that case, I will open the passageway to One-Line-Sky for you. I will wait for you to come back, then we will achieve great things together.”

Yang Bufan didn’t like to beat around the bush. He agreed to it immediately.

Chapter 1264 - Returning to One-Line-Sky

“Thank you, Brother Yang.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at Yang Bufan. Besides the Evil Lord, there was no other people who could help him get out of the Evil Abyss. So, it seemed like everything that Jiang Chen did here was very wise after all. If he had been concealing himself all this while, he wouldn't have today's opportunity.

Tyrant and Big Yellow silently gave Jiang Chen a praising look. A successful person would always be able to do something which ordinary people couldn't do, anywhere and any time. People like Jiang Chen could never live their lives in mediocrity as that was akin to wasting time.

Jiang Chen was a person who was good at creating miracles. Take the Evil Abyss for example, after just a month since his arrival, he had already created plenty of miracles such as unifying the outer region and calling the Evil Lord 'brother'. They were afraid that only Jiang Chen could do things like this.

“Brother Jiang, we will now open the passageway to One-Line-Sky,” said Yang Bufan.

A spirit talisman materialized in his hand. It was a spatial spirit talisman as it exuded a thick spatial aura. That was to say, all the passageways that were linked to dozens of domains were in the control of Yang Bufan.

“Hold on, Brother Yang, I have brought two girls with me earlier on. They are also my friends. They had been swept into the Evil Abyss by accident. Given their cultivation base, they will only be a nuisance if they stayed here, also, this place is extremely unsuitable for them. I would like take them with me as well so that they can leave this dangerous place,” said Jiang Chen. He must get Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying out of here because having them here was like having some kind of inhibition.

“En.”

Yang Bufan nodded, and he immediately grasped at the air. Light flickered and shadows suffused the spatial zone. Then, two figures were grabbed by his hands. They were no doubt the shocked Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying.

This was the means of an Immortal King. He could shake the spatial law and move mountains with a single movement, like an omnipotent being.

The two girls were sitting in the prefecture as guests. All of a sudden, a gale surged around them and pulled them to an unknown area. Such a situation could certainly induce panic to anyone, but after seeing Jiang Chen and the others, they heaved a sigh of relief.

“Big Brother Jiang.” Yan Qingcheng came to Jiang Chen’s side.

“Qingcheng, Sister Ying, quickly greet the Evil Lord. Evil Lord will send you all back to One-Line-Sky,” said Jiang Chen.

After knowing that they could finally leave this gruesome place, Yan Qingcheng didn’t seem to be much affected, she thought that being with Jiang Chen was the happiest thing ever, except for Sister Ying who seemed extremely excited, as leaving Evil Abyss was something she had been longing for.

“Greetings, Evil Lord.”

Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying saluted Yang Bufan deeply. They were in too much pressure standing in front of the Evil Lord, they didn’t even have the courage to lift their heads. To them, the Evil Lord was a legendary figure, the true emperor whom they wouldn’t have the chance to meet in their lives. Undeniably, the incredible Qi of an Immortal King made them nervous.

An Immortal King was a peak existence that they could never reach in their lifetime.

“En.”

Yang Bufan nodded with a grim face. When he was in front of Jiang Chen, he was in a jovial mood, but when he was in front of others, he was back in his demeanour of being the Evil Lord.

Hua La...

The spirit talisman in Yang Bufan's hands cracked before turning into an ethereal passageway. The unceasing rays of light and dense spatial Qi made their scalp numb.

"Brother Jiang, the passageway is already opened," said Yang Bufan.

"Thanks Brother Yang." Jiang Chen cupped his fists once more.

"Big Brother Jiang, you have to be careful in here."

Yan Qingcheng pulled Jiang Chen's arm and spoke. Her eyes were filled with reluctance. She thought that the Evil Lord had opened this passageway especially for her and Huang Ying, and Jiang Chen wouldn't be leaving with them.

"I would naturally be always careful when I'm here, but now I'm going back with the both of you," said Jiang Chen.

Without giving Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying the time to feel surprised, he pulled the two girls with his hands and vanished in the passageway.

In the sky above a vast expanse of mountains in One-Line-Sky, an opening burst open in the void. Three silhouettes staggered out from it and almost lost their balance.

Two were female and one was a male. Without a doubt, they were Jiang Chen and the two girls.

"I'm finally back. I can finally say goodbye to that hell-like place."

Huang Ying looked at the surrounding with excitement. She stretched out her arms and showed a face of joy. That was right. Everything here was an enjoyment to her. This place was like a

paradise compared to the Evil Abyss.

Yan Qingcheng also seemed very delighted. She, too, didn't want to stay in a place like Evil Abyss for a long time.

Jiang Chen smiled while staring at the girls. He could understand their current mood. They had suffered so much in Evil Abyss and if they hadn't met him at the last second, he was afraid that they would've already died somewhere in Evil Abyss.

After all, they weren't like Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen always like stimulation and yearned for passion, which was why the environment in Evil Abyss was so intoxicating for him.

"Big Brother Jiang, why have you come with us? Why hadn't Big Yellow and Tyrant come out?" asked Yan Qingcheng curiously.

"I left the Evil Abyss because I have matters to attend to. Once I'm done with them, I would still have to return as an agreement has been made between me and the Evil Lord," said Jiang Chen with a smile.

At this time, Huang Ying approached Jiang Chen and saluted Jiang Chen with her utmost sincerity.

"Young Master Jiang, I can never repay your kindness, but when you are in need of me, I'll be there and will provide any help that I can give," said Huang Ying.

Jiang Chen was the most outstanding person she had ever met. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen, her own fate would be unimaginable.

"There's no need to be polite, Sister Ying. I can see that we're in the boundary of One-Line-Sky, which isn't far away from Yan City. I will send you two back to Yan City, and I'll be off after that," said Jiang Chen.

Judging by the terrain, there were only a few thousand miles away from Yan City, which was the safest place he could leave these two girls at. Subsequently, he would have to return to One-Line-Sky to check the latest event.

“Big Brother Jiang.”

Yan Qingcheng wanted to say something, but she stopped herself. Last time, she decided to leave Yan City all because of Jiang Chen. She had never thought that this would only lead her back to the starting point. But the good thing was, she had met Jiang Chen once more.

Chapter 1265 - Big Event

“Qingcheng, stay in Yan City and cultivate well. As I have too many enemies in One-Line-Sky, it won’t do you any good if you follow me there. After I have settled the matter at hand, I will arrange a good cultivation place for you.” Jiang Chen patted Yan Qingcheng’s shoulder.

He understood Yan Qingcheng’s intention very well. She almost got herself killed in Evil Abyss partly because of him.

However, the current situation wouldn’t allow her to come with Jiang Chen. Moreover, there were too many things that Jiang Chen wanted to do. Either it was in One-Line-Sky or in Evil Abyss, it was too dangerous for her because Jiang Chen had too many enemies. Take the Profound Sun Sect for instance, the sect master had already given the orders to kill him on sight.

Even in Skycloud Pavilion, he was facing constant troubles. Because he had killed Qu Yuan and offended Great Elder Yang Shu, he was sent to Evil Abyss by Tian Muyun. In addition, Tian Muyun was Jiang Chen’s enemy as well. As such, Jiang Chen’s life would never have peace in either of these two places, it would be a burden to bring Yan Qingcheng along.

“Qingcheng understand. In that case, Big Brother Jiang must be careful.”

Yan Qingcheng nodded. She was an intelligent person. She knew the difference between her and Jiang Chen very well, and that Jiang Chen was a man who did great things. So following him wouldn’t be appropriate.

A while later, Jiang Chen sent Yan Qingcheng and Huang Ying outside of Yan City and left. As he had already divined the things that would happen in One-Line-Sky, he had to find out what it was at the earliest possible time.

While flying through the clouds and fog, he gazed below at the mountains and rivers moving oppositely like a flowing light and felt a sense of relief. His lips curved into a slight smile.

“Tian Muyun, Yang Shu, both of you can rack your brains out, however, you still wouldn’t be able to figure out how I can get out of the Evil Abyss so soon.”

Jiang Chen muttered. Given the situation in Evil Abyss, it was basically impossible for anyone to walk out of it alive once one entered it. Besides, Jiang Chen was merely a Heaven Immortal.

Back when Tian Muyun sentenced Jiang Chen to the Evil Abyss, Yang Shu didn’t express any sort of refusal. This indicated that he was convinced that Jiang Chen would die once he entered such a place.

In fact, what Yang Shu thought was the truth, but Jiang Chen had created a miracle out of it. He had obtained the greatest benefits in such a short time, and came to agreement with the Evil Lord and left Evil Abyss alive.

Cloudmist City.

Jiang Chen once again returned to this city. He could sense Fu Hui’s Qi drifting in the sky above the city. Back when he attacked the ore mine of Profound Sun Sect and was sought after by them, he arrived at this city and met Fu Hui. After that, Fu Hui recommended him into Skycloud Pavilion.

Jiang Chen had always treated Fu Hui as his friend as Fu Hui had helped him a lot.

“Fu Hui is a jack of all trades. Since he’s in the city, I will just go and ask him about the things that happened here.”

Jiang Chen spoke in his heart, then vanished in a flash, heading downwards to Cloudmist City. Fu Hui was a good friend to mix with. He had a reputation in the inner sect of Skycloud Pavilion. It was also because he had told Jiang Chen about the One-Line Eight

Immortals and the Regenerative Lotus that Jiang Chen was able to stole the Regenerative Lotus, regrowing Han Yan's arm.

Inside an incomparably elegant room in the prefecture, Fu Hui was enjoying his wine all by himself.

*Hu... *Hu...*

Suddenly, the door of the room blew open. A ghostly figure zipped past the doorway and the door closed automatically.

“Who is it?”

Fu Hui was jolted to his feet. His face overflowed with nervousness. Being a late Heaven Immortal expert, it's was apparent that this person who entered his room unnoticeably must be stronger than him. How could he not be shocked by it?

“Brother Fu does have a leisure life.” Jiang Chen chuckled.

When Fu Hui took a good look at the intruder, his eyes went wide and was in shock for a moment, like he had just seen a scary ghost.

“Jiang... Jiang Chen.”

Fu Hui couldn't help feeling astounded. Not just the people of Skycloud Pavilion, everyone in One-Line-Sky, including their enemy – Profound Sun Sect – knew that Jiang Chen had been sent to Evil Abyss by Tian Muyun.

When the news spread out, everyone was lamenting for Jiang Chen; they couldn't believe that a rare genius like him had fallen just like that. Profound Sun Sect immediately cancelled the order to kill Jiang Chen on sight. To them, Tian Muyun had helped them take revenge on Jiang Chen, going into Evil Abyss was no different than being dead.

“It has just been a month, Brother Fu. You have already forgotten who I am?”

Jiang Chen chuckled, then sat down casually and took a drink from the wine.

Fu Hui finally regained his senses and the daze on his face was immediately replaced with delight.

“Brother Jiang, haven’t you been to the Evil Abyss? Could it be you that have already returned from Evil Abyss?”

Fu Hui couldn’t believe it. How could there be a concept that someone could just walked out of Evil Abyss alive?

“That’s right. I have returned and you are the first to see me.” Jiang Chen shrugged.

“My god! You’ve actually come out of that place. I thought you have already died in there. Goodness! You have created another miracle.”

Fu Hui spoke in an overjoyed tone. He strongly believed that once this news spread out, another heavy bomb would land in One-Line-Sky, possibly setting off another great upheaval.

What surprised him the most was that Jiang Chen had already advanced to the late Heaven Immortal realm. However, he sighed helplessly in the end as he had nothing to comment about this monstrous genius. It seemed like everything was possible to a legendary man, especially after he had just walked out of Evil Abyss alive.

“Brother Fu, is there something big that is about to happen in One-Line-Sky? I have come back from Evil Abyss because of it,” Jiang Chen asked straightforwardly.

He believed that if something were to happen in One-Line-Sky, Fu Hui must knew something about it.

“Ai! You are worthy of being the one Elder Tianji Zi looked for. You can even predict that there is big event coming in One-Line-Sky. Brother Jiang, it seemed like I can do nothing else besides being impressed by you.” Fu Hui shook his head, feeling speechless.

Chapter 1266 - Ancient Tomb

There was no way that Fu Hui wouldn't be impressed by Jiang Chen. After learning that Jiang Chen had been sentenced into the Evil Abyss, he was certain that Jiang Chen would die for sure. It took him quite a while to recover from his sadness. Today, unexpectedly, Jiang Chen was standing right in front of him, intact.

Jiang Chen's existence was already a miracle. Adding his ability to peek into the future, it made him even more abnormal.

Fortunately, today wasn't Fu Hui first time knowing Jiang Chen, so he was able to recover from the extraordinary shock very quickly.

"Brother Jiang, you have returned just at the right time. Something big indeed has happened in One-Line-Sky. Not long ago, some cultivators have found an ancient tomb in the barren land in One-Line-Sky. The tomb itself is a spatial zone. It must be left behind by at least an Immortal King. Elder Tianji Zi has already divined it once, stating that the ancient tomb is a treasured place containing both fortune and danger. This is no doubt a rare chance for the young generation of the four major powers. So, they have decided to open the ancient tomb tomorrow, and allow the young geniuses to seek for fortunes," answered Fu Hui, explaining about the big event that was about to happen in One-Line-Sky once more. This incident had already stirred everyone in One-Line-Sky, making it no longer a secret. In fact, Jiang Chen would be able to obtain this information by asking anyone on the street.

"Ancient tomb?"

A glimmer of light flashed past Jiang Chen's eyes. It seemed like his trip back here wasn't in vain. Truly, the expedition in the ancient tomb would be a great opportunity to all young geniuses in One-Line-Sky, even to him. Since his master had already divined

it, he felt more assured with his calculation.

“That’s right. It’s a tomb, but no one knew what’s inside. It’s very likely that it was left behind by a mighty Immortal King or an even greater existence. Tomorrow is the day of its expedition, and I suppose Brother Jiang won’t miss it, right?” Fu Hui said with a smile.

“Course. I have come all the way back just for this. I wonder who will be the people that will enter the tomb.” Jiang Chen asked with curiosity.

“The ancient tomb expedition is open specifically for the young experts of the four major powers and some qualified rogue cultivators. The four major powers will not exert full control over the tomb. As many individuals will be participating on this expedition, it will become a rare test for the geniuses. Some inner and core disciples will also be joining in this expedition. There will also be some extremely terrifying geniuses who have already exceeded the range of the core disciples, the true disciples. Their cultivation ranges from half-step Golden Immortal to true Golden Immortal realm. Apart from all that, the higher ups – the Golden Immortal seniors – of the major powers will also be participating.” Fu Hui said.

He was good at getting news and the details.

“Golden Immortal experts? It seems like this expedition isn’t going to be peaceful. However, this is what makes it exciting. It would be meaningless if it was too serene.”

The corner of Jiang Chen’s mouth revealed a smirk. If it was before, he would have some fear for those Golden Immortal experts due to their wide gap, but now that he was already a late Heaven Immortal, and was only a few steps away from the half-step Divine Immortal realm. As long as he could obtain some fortunes in the tomb, he could make a breakthrough to the half-step Divine Immortal realm at any time, by then, killing a half-step

Golden Immortal wouldn't be a problem anymore.

Since Jiang Chen had already returned, One-Line-Sky would lose its peace once more.

“But you have to be careful, Jiang Chen. Profound Sun Sect has already treated you as their arch-enemy. I'm afraid that they will never let you go if they see you. Plus, the relationship of the four major powers have never been good. There would be lots of killings in the tomb. At that time, you are going to be in the limelight again.” Fu Hui said.

This was something that he was certain of. Given Jiang Chen's identity in One-Line-Sky, he would be a hot figure that people couldn't miss wherever he went.

“Well, I have no intention of concealing myself. I have only one objective after entering the tomb – that is to obtain benefits. Anyone who step in my way will die. Anyone who provokes me will also die.”

Jiang Chen's Qi fluctuated, emitting a vague aura of a king. That was the incomparable aura of an inborn king.

“Of course, no ordinary people could stand Brother Jiang's extraordinary means.”

Fu Hui looked shock. He didn't have a single doubt about Jiang Chen's arrogant declaration. He even felt that what Jiang Chen said was the truth instead of arrogance.

“By the way, Brother Jiang, since you have already returned, do you want to return to the sect and head over to the ancient tomb with our sect's geniuses?” Fu Hui asked.

“No, I have my own way of entering it. Don't tell anyone about my return as this will create troubles for me.” Jiang Chen reminded.

Just like what Fu Hui said, he had too many enemies, and Profound Sun Sect had always regarded him as a major enemy. If

he walked into the ancient tomb openly, he would only bring endless trouble upon himself. Even though he wasn't afraid of troubles, he was unwilling to deliberately cause himself trouble as he didn't intend to go to the ancient tomb just to create troubles.

“I understand. Don't worry.”

Fu Hui nodded. He wasn't a fool; naturally, he understood Jiang Chen's concern.

Jiang Chen spent a day in Cloudmist City. The next day, early in the morning, he headed towards the barren land with Fu Hui. When they were neared the area, Jiang Chen separated from Fu Hui and headed towards the area by himself. With the help of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, he was able to sneak into the ancient tomb stealthily.

Today was the opening day of the ancient tomb. A sea of people had already been waiting here early in the morning. Besides the experts of the four major powers, there were also plenty of rogue cultivators. Either it was in Saint Origin World or the Immortal World, rogue cultivators had always led a challenging life. Because they were short of cultivation resources, they couldn't be compared to those in major powers. So, whenever there was an expedition, they would be the hastiest ones. Despite the danger and risk of the expedition, they wouldn't hesitate to make a move, because to them, such an opportunity was too rare; and once they could obtain a great benefit from the adventure, they would soar up to the top of the food chain. So rogue cultivators would always be the one who cherished the chance of going into an expedition.

Chapter 1267 - Seeing Tian Muyun Once More

Apart from the large number of rogue cultivators, the experts of the four major powers were wearing their respective uniform and stood at four different places. Every one of these young geniuses put on a high and mighty face, they had the reason to be proud. Compared to their peers, they had a tremendous advantage over the others.

“Why are so many rogue cultivators here? The ancient tomb was discovered by the experts of the four major powers. It should be closed to the public and only be opened to us. Didn’t those puny rogue cultivators have any awareness of their own power before coming here to compete with us?”

“Although the four major powers are the peak existences in One-Line-Sky and has unparalleled status across this region, we still have to show some courtesy. Besides, even if those rogue cultivators joined us in this expedition, do you think they can compete against us?”

“That’s right. This would only show how magnanimous we are. Even if we allowed those rogue cultivators into the ancient tomb, they are still going to keep a distance from us and won’t dare to touch anything that we have a liking to.”

.....

The disciples of the four major powers were seriously proud and were brimming with a strong sense of superiority, totally not putting the rogue cultivators in their eyes. In their point of view, the fact the four major powers had opened this expedition to the rogue cultivators was a blessing to them and they should be grateful for it.

Likewise, majority of the rogue cultivators had self-awareness.

Under normal circumstances, they wouldn't dare to offend the geniuses of the four major powers, provoking them was akin to digging a grave for themselves. After all, not every one of them was like Jiang Chen.

Certainly, quite a lot of geniuses of the four major powers were present today. It ranged from Heaven Immortal inner sect disciples to Divine Immortal core disciples. There were also a dozen half-step Golden Immortal geniuses who were standing at the centre of their respective group. They looked glamorous, like cranes amongst the chickens. Their heads were held high. These were the typical arrogant geniuses. Peerless geniuses like them were always the target of nurturing of the four major powers, they are important figures. Every one of them possessed some very powerful means. Although they were merely half-step Golden Immortals, their true combat strength was on par with early Golden Immortal experts, which was also what made them so fearsome.

Jiang Chen hadn't seen any Golden Immortal experts around. He thought that even if there were Golden Immortal experts participating in this expedition, they wouldn't go into the ancient tomb with these cultivators as they had respectable status.

"My fellow friend, I see that many have already arrived, but why isn't the doors of the ancient tomb opened yet?" Jiang Chen asked a rogue cultivator beside him.

"I figure that you still don't know about it yet, my friend. According to the others, there is a fierce blockade sealing the doors of the tomb. It can only be open by the joint strength of the experts of the four major powers." The rogue cultivator said.

"So that's how it is."

Jiang Chen replied. Then slowly, he released his soul force and reached the huge doors of the ancient tomb. He could sense a great aura drifting around the doors the height of 6 to 9 meters. The

surface of the doors were filled with variegated marks and scratches, indicating the age of this tomb.

No doubt, there was a layer of seal an inch away from the doors. In his opinion, the seal was crumbling and had lost its power due to the passage of time.

It seems like the ancient tomb isn't as simple as I thought. To break the remaining layer of the seal, it needs the joint strength of all the top experts of One-Line-Sky. I have no idea how powerful this seal is when it was at its peak. I'm afraid that this isn't something left by just an Immortal King.

Jiang Chen whispered in his heart. He couldn't help being astonished by the power of the seal. He was sure that this ancient tomb wasn't as simple as it looked ages ago. At the same time, he was intrigued by the mystery inside the ancient tomb.

Fu Hui had joined the group of Skycloud Pavilion inner sect disciples. He scanned around and saw no trace of Jiang Chen or his Qi.

He couldn't help chuckling in his heart, this was within his expectation. He knew that given Jiang Chen's skills, no one would be able to find him.

A while later, several incomparably powerful Qi flew over from different directions. There were a total of eight of them. They were precisely the One-Line Eight Immortals, the eight experts that represented the peak, noble, inviolable beings in One Line Sky.

"The One-Line Eight Immortals are too powerful. Half-step Immortal King realm... I'm afraid that I won't be able to reach this level in my lifetime."

"They are the supreme existences in One-Line-Sky, totally incomparable to any of us."

"The Eight Immortals have come. The doors of the ancient tomb will be opened soon. We have to be prepared now. Although there

may be tremendous fortunes inside there, there are also dangers. We have to be careful once we enter it. Don't get yourself killed before even obtaining any benefits. That would only make your trip in vain."

.....

Many rogue cultivators started discussing. Despite being called rogue cultivators, they were no idiots. They surely knew that there weren't only fortunes inside the ancient tomb, but also dangers. Aside from the danger that might exist inside, competing with the geniuses of the four major powers for resources was also an extremely dangerous thing.

Jiang Chen's gaze shifted to Tian Muyun and felt a pang of surprise.

Tian Muyun is worthy to be called the genius of the generation. It has only been a month, but he has already made another advancement in his cultivation, leaving him only a step away from the Immortal King realm. At this rate, he's going to break through to the Immortal King realm sooner or later. It seems like I have to advance as soon as possible to shorten the gap between us.

Jiang Chen spoke. With his meticulous mind and proficiency in both the Great Derivation Soul Technique and Great Divination Art, he was able to discern things that the others couldn't from Tian Muyun. He knew that this person was an extremely terrifying genius. This proved how sinister Ouyang He's vision was. Jiang Chen was almost certain that it wouldn't be long before Tian Muyun become an Immortal King.

Given Tian Muyun's disposition and ambition, once he reached the Immortal King realm, it would be the time of chaos in One-Line-Sky. This time, Tian Muyun had given Jiang Chen a sense of urgency to improve himself fast.

While Jiang Chen was gazing at Tian Muyun, Tian Muyun shifted his eyes to Jiang Chen's side as if he could sense Jiang

Chen's presence. Without delay, Jiang Chen cast out the Qi of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to conceal himself among the crowd perfectly, giving Tian Muyun no chance to detect his Qi.

Chapter 1268 - The Time Limit of Seven Days

Tian Muyun scanned the crowd again and frowned when he found nothing unusual, a genius like him rarely made any mistakes in his senses.

“Master Tian. Since everyone has already arrived, we break the seal now so that the disciples can begin their training,” the patriarch of Yun Family, Yun Zhonghe, spoke.

The fact that he had only asked Tian Muyun showed the degree of importance he attached to this pavilion master. In truth, Tian Muyun’s performance in these past two years had given the other top experts a hint of pressure. In their point of view, Tian Muyun’s current status had already surpassed Ouyang He’s.

“En, let’s begin now.”

Tian Muyun nodded. His body flashed and headed towards the huge doors of the ancient tomb, followed closely by Daoist Yufeng and the other top experts of the three major powers.

This was probably the first time that the One-Line Eight Immortals came together in unison, but this was also because of their common objective. Anyone should know that young geniuses were the future of the sects. Tian Muyun was a good example: he made his way to the top as an ordinary genius. If it wasn’t for Tian Muyun, Skycloud Pavilion would have collapsed and be devoured by the other three major powers after Ouyang He’s death, because Daoist Yufeng’s sole strength wasn’t enough to support such a big sect.

The Eight Immortals struck out a massive energy and various profound hand seals. They were all half-step Immortal King experts. Although they had yet to master spatial force, they already had a certain understanding of the spatial law.

Under the joint attack of the Eight Immortals, the seal was

destroyed with ease.

Ka... *Ka...*

The rusty and huge ancient doors rattled open slowly and with difficulty. No one had a clue about how long it hadn't been opened until now.

The sound of the huge doors could be heard clearly even from a distance. Some experts could even sense the stench of decay flowing out of the ancient tomb.

The One-Line Eight Immortals were fixing their eyes at the huge doors. When the doors were fully opened, Huangfu Qun frowned.

“Something's wrong,” said Huangfu Qun.

“What's wrong?” asked Yun Zhonglong.

“Although the seal outside has already been broken, there's still an invisible barrier inside that hasn't been destroyed yet,” said Huangfu Qun.

Amongst the seven Immortals, he was the only one who specialised in formation. Which was why the other seven didn't notice it at first. But after hearing what he said, the others quickly circulated their divine sense and found out that there was actually a faint Qi of a barrier behind the doorway.

“The seal feels like death, like it has never been opened before,” said Tian Muyun.

“Let me examine it.”

Huangfu Qun moved forward. Given his many years of experience in formations, he could discover a clue from it in an instant.

“How was it?” Huangfu Yaotian asked.

“This seal is much scarier than the previous one. Although the seal hasn't been activated yet, it has been triggered the instant the front doors were opened. According to my calculation, this seal

will probably be activated seven days later and the doors will automatically close. In other words, those who enter the ancient tomb would only have seven days of time. Anyone who can't get out of here within that time period, he or she will be trapped inside forever," said Huangfu Qun.

"We can still break this seal together seven days later," said Dugu Sheng arrogantly.

"That is hard to say. What if it can't be broken? This isn't something we should bet on. Therefore, we have to fix the time. Anyone who goes in must get out within seven days. Seven days should be enough for training." Huangfu Qun shook his head and said.

"It seems like this is the only way."

Yun Zhonglong nodded, agreeing to what Huangfu Qun said. After all, they couldn't joke around with the lives of the young geniuses. One should know that there were too many people who would go into the ancient tomb this time. Adding the rogue cultivators, there were tens of thousands of them.

Subsequently, the One-Line Eight Immortals returned to their camp and started making arrangements.

"Everyone in Skycloud Pavilion, listen up. The ancient tomb will only be opened for seven days. So you all have to get out of there within this time period, or else, you may be trapped permanently inside when the doors closed," announced Daoist Yufeng.

"This ancient tomb sure is extraordinary. It can actually close on its own."

"Seven days isn't short. We should try our best to get as many benefits as possible. My cultivation has already reached the peak of the half-step Divine Immortal realm, one more step to reach the true Divine Immortal realm. By that time, I will become a high and mighty core disciple. This is what I hoped for after coming out of

the ancient tomb.”

“That’s right. This is a rare life and death trial. We must take advantage of it as we only have seven days of time. We have to utilize every time we have and prevent ourselves from getting stuck inside.”

.....

Many experts began commenting about the unexpected time limit. Anyway, it was still an acceptable time period for training.

Meanwhile, the other three major powers also finished their arrangements. Because the experts didn’t try to lower their voices, every rogue cultivator on the scene was able to hear every word clearly. In these seven days, there were going to be lots of intense competitions.

“Get lost. I will be the first to go in, if not, I’m going to lose more. Being the first will probably get me more benefits first!”

Someone roared, he then flew towards the huge doorway of the tomb. Once a person took the lead, the others also jumped on the bandwagon. All of the young geniuses of the four major powers surged frenziedly into the doorway like a continuous flow of water, while those rogue cultivators were still standing there, knowing that this wasn’t the right time to enter and that they wouldn’t get any benefits to go in at this time.

In just three minutes, all the geniuses of the four major powers had vanished into the spatial zone of the tomb. Next, the rogue cultivators rushed in without delay. Some had eyes that had already turned red, fearing that they would be slower than the others.

Jiang Chen mixed into the crowd unnoticeably and reached the doorway in an instant. With a flash, he disappeared into the darkness.

“Uh?”

Something caught Tian Muyun's attention as he looked at the doorway of the ancient tomb. He didn't know why that silhouette had given him a sense of familiarity.

"Impossible. It's virtually impossible to get out of the Evil Abyss alive." Tian Muyun let out a cold laugh.

Chapter 1269 - The Mysterious Living Thing

As a matter of fact, Tian Muyun did feel slight regret for the loss of Jiang Chen. In any case, Jiang Chen was a rare and brilliant talent. If he was still around, he would've been a great asset to Skycloud Pavilion.

However, in Tian Muyun's heart, he didn't need a genius like Jiang Chen to determine the future of the pavilion. He believed that the fate of the pavilion should only be under his sole control. Besides, every time he saw Jiang Chen, he would feel a twinge discomfort.

At first, his intention was only to frighten Jiang Chen by suggesting the Evil Abyss, and to give himself the sense of superiority. Unexpectedly, Jiang Chen agreed to it without hesitation.

Inside the ancient tomb, a cold and gloomy wind was blowing from numerous directions. It was like a pit. It was filled with damp air and the stench of decay and corpse Qi disgusted everyone.

"Be careful, everyone. The corpse Qi here can corrode us," someone warned.

To Jiang Chen, such corrosive Qi could not affect him at all as his blood and Qi were too vigorous. His dragon transformation skill was precisely the natural enemy of these hazy air. Even if the corpse Qi entered Jiang Chen's body, it would immediately be eliminated. This was the advantage that Jiang Chen had.

The dark path led to numerous black passageways ahead. Since the tomb hadn't been opened for a long time, they were afraid that the deeper they went, the stronger the corpse Qi.

Everyone didn't stop heading deeper into the tomb once they selected their passageway. After all, they only had seven days. Either it was the geniuses of the major powers or rogue cultivators,

none of them wanted to waste any time.

At this time, a figure approached and reached Jiang Chen's very quickly. Without a doubt, he was Fu Hui. He had left his group for Jiang Chen. He was an intelligent person, knowing that it was safest to follow Jiang Chen.

"Brother Jiang, there are so many passageways here. Which way do you think we have to go?" asked Fu Hui.

"Each of these passageways will lead to the centre of the tomb. If I'm not mistaken, each of these passageways is full of dangers. So choosing any one of them wouldn't make a difference," Jiang Chen said.

He had already examined the tomb with the Great Soul Derivation Technique. All the passageways had the same Qi. If there was no accident, one would reach the centre of the tomb eventually through any of these passageways.

Furthermore, the dense corpse Qi on the path indicated that there should be plenty of dead beings. When both the death Qi and corpse Qi mingled in the air, it would give birth to some fierce creatures. These creatures could be extremely terrifying and couldn't be killed due to the environment they lived in. This wasn't Jiang Chen's first time facing this kind of situation.

Since every path was the same, they might as well randomly pick one. Jiang Chen and Fu Hui chose a passageway where there were lesser people. As he didn't want to draw any attention to himself now, a quiet path would suit him well.

Groups of three to five people could be observed on the road. These rogue experts had formed small alliances with the others before they came in. As they didn't have any advantages like those disciples in major powers, sticking together was their best option, allowing them to take care of one another.

In addition to forming alliance, there were also groups that

seemed vigilant at all times, reluctant to get any closer with the other groups, maintaining a distance of a dozen meters.

Jiang Chen and Fu Hui swept past like a gale, at a speed faster than any one of them.

“Brother Jiang, the corpse Qi inside is getting thicker. There is also the Qi of death. Both of these Qi are extremely corrosive and unpleasant.”

Fu Hui said with a frown. Anyone who came to such a place would feel its gloominess and horror.

“Be careful. I sense no calmness here. Look over there.” Jiang Chen reminded and shifted his gaze to one side.

Fu Hui looked over and saw a dried corpse by the side of the path. It was hard to tell how long that dried corpse had existed as it had already completely decayed. Holes could be seen on its surface. Its flesh seemed as if it had been dug out by some kind of sharp weapons. The death of this person was tragic.

“This was an act of some kind of being, a being that eats human flesh,” said Jiang Chen.

After hearing this, Fu Hui’s nerve was set on edge. He casted out his divine sense and pushed away all the neglectful thoughts in his head.

They had been walking on the road for a dozen of minutes now, but the path seemed endless. The corpse and death Qi was getting denser. These corpse Qi could not only corrode one’s Immortal Qi and flesh, but also one’s mind. Anyone who stayed in such an environment for a long period of time was likely to have a mental breakdown.

Argh...

All of a sudden, a blood-curdling scream broke the silence. Within the voice, they could sense fear and agony that set everyone’s nerve on edge.

Argh...

Not long after that, another agonizing scream was heard from the front, it reverberated continuously in the empty spatial zone.

“Damn! What’s going on at the front?” Someone couldn’t help but curse.

Ka...Ka...

Just at this moment, a squeal suddenly rang out in the sky. Then, an unknown black bird flew out abruptly from an unknown direction, like it existed in the void and could come out and snap its prey at any time.

It was fast and agile. The moment it appeared, it locked on Jiang Chen and Fu Hui. Its one-foot long beak reminded both of them of the emptied corpse.

The giant black bird flashed its wings and reached Fu Hui in a blink.

Fu Hui was alarmed. He drew out a long sword and slashed the giant bird into half. Fu Hui was after all a late Heaven Immortal expert and a rare genius in the inner sect of Skycloud Pavilion. So generally, he was capable enough to handle a situation like this alone.

However, before Fu Hui could celebrate, the halved bird flew into the air by itself and mended with one another at rapid speed.

“It revived...”

Fu Hui’s eyes went wide as it was his first time seeing such a situation.

Chapter 1270 - Black Corpse Raven

Ga!

The resurrected giant bird surged at Fu Hui once more with the same momentum as before. Fu Hui was horrified. As a late Heaven Immortal expert, despite all the life-and-death battles he had experienced, he had never seen such a scene as scary as this.

Without waiting for Fu Hui to attack, Jiang Chen struck out a big palm, imprisoning the bird inside his hand. The bird went frenzied within Jiang Chen's hand but couldn't find a way out.

Jiang Chen was very calm -- this was exactly what he had guessed. Plus, this wasn't his first time encountering this kind of situation.

"This is the 'black corpse raven' which only eats human flesh. This divine being was given birth by the environment here. As long as the death and corpse Qi in this place aren't completely extinguished, this raven will never die even if you killed it a hundred times. If I'm not mistaken, there should be plenty of black corpse ravens in this place, which is the scariest of all." Jiang Chen said.

"My Goodness! How could there be such a scary creature? If it is truly invincible, it will be the end of the world for us."

Fu Hui was in shock, unable to accept this reality. To him, this was way too horrifying, something he had never experienced before. At this time, not just him, even the group of rogue cultivators watching the scene were also horrified.

The black corpse raven was moving restlessly inside Jiang Chen's hand, making everyone focus their attention on his hand. All of them wanted to see if this young man knew something about the black corpse raven and had ways to deal with this undead creature.

Looking at the raven, Jiang Chen's mouth revealed a smirk.

Although the essence of this raven was different from the demonic devils of the Evil Clan, it was still the same thing to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda -- a nourishment. Others might not be able to kill it, but Jiang Chen could easily eliminate it -- he wouldn't give the raven the chance to revive. The moment the black corpse raven was killed, it would immediately be refined by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and vanish completely.

A surge of energy was suddenly ejected out of Jiang Chen's palm. The raven let out a mournful cry before breaking down, disintegrating. Fu Hui's eyes widened again. This time the black corpse raven was killed, but didn't come back to life. Everyone was shocked and couldn't believe what they had just seen.

“Amazing...”

The rogue cultivators at the back saw everything with their own eyes. There was no way that they wouldn't be shocked when they witnessed an undead creature that could resurrect was killed by Jiang Chen so easily like he was killing an ant.

“Brother Jiang, your means is truly too terrifying.” Fu Hui gave his thumbs up to Jiang Chen.

Argh...

As soon as Fu Hui's voice dropped, another wail was heard. However, this time, it didn't come from the front, but from the back. Jiang Chen and Fu Hui turned and saw a cultivator being pierced through on the head by another stealthy black corpse raven. The cultivator died instantly.

Hua La La...

Subsequently, fluttering sounds were heard. That was the sound of flapping wings and it gave everyone the creeps.

“A flock of black corpse ravens are on their way here.”

Jiang Chen's mouth showed a slight smile. Everyone was supposed to be afraid and frightened, but Jiang Chen was feeling

the opposite instead. The black corpse ravens didn't seem to concern him at all. Like the demonic devils, every one of these deadly ravens was going to be his nourishment.

Ga... *Ga...*

Massive amount of black corpse ravens emerged, like a dark and blackened cloud, making everyone's breathing difficult. At least a dozen miles of the path was now filled with hundreds of undead ravens.

Argh... *Argh...* *Argh...*

Screams began to sound from different directions. Apparently, these black corpse ravens had already started to attack and their targets were precisely the cultivators here. The cultivators with stronger combat strength found it manageable. As for those ordinary cultivators, this was a disaster for them.

"F*ck! What're these things? Why can't they be killed?"

"Dammit! These things won't die. They resurrect immediately after they die, like undead creatures. With so many of them, we won't stand a chance. I now regret ever coming here. My life is already gone for good before I can even obtain any benefits."

"F*ck you, f*ck you all, ugly birds!"

.....

There were wails and curses all over the area. The sudden attack of the black corpse ravens had dealt a great impact to the cultivators. Fortunately, these ravens weren't too strong and were still manageable by those powerful experts.

In spite of that, every one of them knew that the current circumstance wasn't favourable to them, these black corpse ravens couldn't stay dead. At this rate, it would only be a matter of time before these cultivators were exhausted and became prey to these ravens.

At this point, many cultivators began to regret. They regretted choosing this path. Some were even regretting coming into this ancient tomb. They had encountered this sort of thing just after they entered the tomb, which only meant that there would be something even scarier waiting for them the deeper they went.

A large number of black corpse ravens rushed towards Jiang Chen and Fu Hui. Such a dense flock of ravens would numb people's scalp. Fu Hui took a deep breath. Although this was his first time confronting such a situation, he had Jiang Chen on his side, which calmed his nerves quite a lot. In fact, he didn't have the intention to attack these undead creatures, he knew that he could do nothing even if he used all of his strongest skills. As long as Jiang Chen was here, all these undead beings would surely be slaughtered.

Hua La.....

With a wave of his palm, True Dragon Flame and True Thunderfire spread out, enveloping all the black corpse ravens and burning all of them to ashes in an instant. Then, all the remaining essences were absorbed by the Pagoda, leaving nothing behind.

As those in front fell, those in the back took up their positions. The huge flock of black corpse ravens continued to die in Jiang Chen's sea of fire, causing a dramatic decrease in their number.

Argh...

More screams were heard as the number of black corpse ravens was increasing. The rogue cultivators near Jiang Chen instantly felt that Jiang Chen was their saviour.

"Look! That youth is amazing! He's able to kill these undead creatures. Let's follow him!" someone shouted.

Then, a lot of rogue cultivators began to break through the ravens' line of attack, heading towards Jiang Chen. At this time, Jiang Chen was just like a bright and shining star in the dark sky.

Chapter 1271 - Extinguishing Countless Number of Them

Jiang Chen's appearance was like a brilliant star, allowing every despairing cultivator to see a glimmer of hope. They understood their situation very well. These black corpse ravens were too horrifying. Even if they had the power to handle them, it would be impossible for them to get rid of these birds completely. If they kept on consuming their energy this way, they would soon be exhausted.

A lot of rogue cultivators approach Jiang Chen, which was the safest course of action at this point. Jiang Chen on the other hand didn't express any disapproval seeing their presence. As long as these people didn't create trouble for him, he wouldn't mind them at all.

As for those rogue cultivators, none of them wanted to die and seeking survival was everyone's natural instinct. Jiang Chen would do the same if he was in the same situation.

"You're all permitted to follow us, but don't interrupt our activities," Fu Hui said coldly to them.

"Of course. We will never forget Young Master's life-saving graciousness. If Young Master needs any help in the future, we will never decline it."

"That's right. There will be no refusal from us."

.....

Words of gratitude started to come out from their mouths.

"That's enough." Jiang Chen said impatiently.

Having this group of people filled his ears with annoying noises while he was focusing on eliminating the black corpse ravens was disturbing.

Hua La...

Ga...Ga...

The huge number of ravens was akin to boundless benefits. They kept on coming like an endless flow of water. Despite their number, they were no big deal to Jiang Chen. All of the black corpse ravens that got close to him were incinerated by both the True Dragon Flame and True Thunderfire, and was then sucked into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda before any of them could resurrect.

As a matter of fact, under the incineration of the flames, the corpse and death Qi around was reducing constantly, which greatly affected the condition that the ravens need to resurrect.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda buzzed unceasingly. The twentieth level began to brighten up. Although these ravens weren't very strong, there were too many of them – thousands – providing the Pagoda a sufficient amount of energy.

In fact, the Pagoda wasn't the only one that benefited, Jiang Chen himself had also benefited from it. As the pagoda was constantly absorbing energy, new dragon marks were forming in his Qi Sea one after another.

Jiang Chen had 630 000 dragon marks, only 20 000 more dragon marks were needed before he advanced to the half-step Divine Immortal realm. He estimated that the deeper he went, the more powerful the black corpse ravens would be. He wouldn't even be surprised if he encountered Divine Immortal ravens. If this continued at this rate, he would make another advancement and the twenty-first level of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda would be fully formed.

To Jiang Chen, this was greatly in his favor. It was like all these benefits were left specifically for him as no one else would be able

to benefit from any of these undead creatures.

After many flocks of black corpse ravens were eliminated, Jiang Chen moved forth speedily once more. The whole path was completely occupied by ravens, but Jiang Chen's sea of fire could burn hundreds of them with ease.

"My God! Who's this youth? When did such a scary genius appear in One-Line-Sky?"

"That's Fu Hui of Cloudmist City. I know him, but I haven't seen this youth before. However, since he's with Fu Hui, he must be a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion. Recently, there was a genius named Jiang Chen that came to Skycloud Pavilion, but sadly, he had been sentenced to the Evil Abyss. So I have no idea who this youth is."

"He must also be a genius of Skycloud Pavilion. Skycloud Pavilion truly is a lair of dragons and tigers. The pavilion itself already has the mighty Tian Muyun. Adding this scary genius, it is only a matter of time before Skycloud Pavilion surpass the other three major powers."

.....

Every one of these rogue cultivators couldn't help being shocked by Jiang Chen's power. They would never believe this if they didn't see it with their own eyes. Having fought those birds themselves, they were extremely clear of how strong those undead creatures were. They knew that these creatures wouldn't die, but in front of Jiang Chen, these horrifying creatures were as vulnerable as insects.

Jiang Chen moved another dozen miles ahead. They were afraid that he had already killed a few thousands of the ravens by now. The twentieth level of the pagoda was agitated. Inside Jiang Chen's body, 10 000 dragon marks had been condensed, leaving only 10 000 more before breaking through to the half-step Divine Immortal realm.

Apparently, Fu Hui could clearly sense the changes in Jiang Chen's Qi as he was the closest to Jiang Chen. While incinerating the ravens, Jiang Chen's cultivation base was getting stronger and stronger. He was afraid that he was the only one who could observe such major changes on Jiang Chen.

Similarly, when the despairing rogue cultivators in front saw Jiang Chen's arrival, they quickly joined forces. After this incident, it was imaginable that Jiang Chen's status would rise dramatically among the rogue cultivators.

This long path had been deserted, but now, nearly a few dozen cultivators were following behind Jiang Chen.

As the path was nearing the end, the number of black corpse ravens were gradually decreasing, but Jiang Chen could sense that every one of these ravens had stronger combat strength, which was a good thing for him.

Not far ahead, three to four disciples in Skycloud Pavilion uniform were besieged by a flock of powerful black corpse ravens with two ravens that had already reached the early Divine Immortal realm. Among the four disciples, the leader was an early Divine Immortal expert and was also precisely a core disciple of Skycloud Pavilion. The other three were inner sect disciples. They seemed as if they had been fighting for a long time. Their faces were beaded with sweat. Some of them even had blood trickling down their bodies.

This couldn't be blamed on them. Although they were strong, this flock of black corpse ravens were too powerful and there were too many of them. Some of the ravens would even hide in the void and sneak-attack the experts. Adding the fact that these birds were invincible, after numerous attempts to kill them, it caused a serious trauma to sprout in their hearts, and when this trauma lasted for a long period, it would turn into despair. So right now, these four disciples of Skycloud Pavilion were ready to give up, they were totally helpless in the face of these undead birds.

Chapter 1272 - Jiang Chen's Return

Their situation happened to be seen by Jiang Chen and Fu Hui. Jiang Chen wasn't familiar with these people. Despite being a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion, he didn't have much dealings with the inner and core disciples, because not long after he joined Skycloud Pavilion, he was sentenced to Evil Abyss due to the continuous troubles he created.

“Brother Jiang, that is Wang Yang, a core disciple of our pavilion. It seems like they have been trapped by the black corpse ravens and their situation isn't favourable. Let's lend them a hand,” said Fu Hui.

Although there had been constant competition among them in the sect, they still have some senses left inside of them. When they saw their fellow disciples needing urgent help, they wouldn't hesitate to provide aid.

“En.”

Jiang Chen nodded. Being a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion, he naturally had to step in and help. In Skycloud Pavilion, he only had one enemy, Tian Muyun, while everyone else were counted as his own ally. After all, Skycloud Pavilion was founded and built by Ouyang He. Every disciple of Skycloud Pavilion was the foundation of Ouyang He's brainchild. Therefore, Jiang Chen wouldn't just watch his fellow disciples in critical condition and do nothing about it.

Moreover, helping his fellow disciples was incomparably beneficial to him. The moment he killed Tian Muyun, the title of pavilion master would naturally fall into his hands and the development and growth of Skycloud Pavilion would be under his care. It was Ouyang He's lifelong wish to see the pavilion prosper and it was necessary for Jiang Chen to fulfil this unfulfilled wish.

Swoosh...

Jiang Chen's body flashed like an arrow that had been shot out from the bow, appearing in front of Wang Yang in a blink. Promptly, Jiang Chen struck out the True Dragon Palm – a huge dragon claw encompassed by flames. A large number of black corpse ravens died immediately, all were burned to ashes, including the two Divine Immortal black corpse ravens. At least half of the total was slapped to death by Jiang Chen's palm.

Hong Long...

Then, Jiang Chen sent out another palm. Sea of fire roared. The agonizing wails of the ravens could be heard. The flock of black corpse ravens that were besieging Wang Yang and the other three disciples were now all dead. None of those creatures were left alive.

Hiss.....

Seeing what had happened, Wang Yang and the others couldn't help but suck in a breath of cold air. Their eyes were filled with shock that came from their innermost soul. After having such an intense battle with those ravens, they knew better than anyone the scariness of those birds, especially those two Divine Immortal undying and invincible black corpse ravens.

Their gazes fell upon Jiang Chen simultaneously. When they saw Jiang Chen's face, their eyes widened. This time, the shock that they felt was even greater than when the black corpse ravens were exterminated.

“Jiang Chen!”

The four of them exclaimed at the same time. Others might not recognize Jiang Chen, but being cultivators of Skycloud Pavilion, it was impossible for them to forget Jiang Chen's face. The great battle between Jiang Chen and Qu Yuan had almost shaken the entire Skycloud Pavilion. Everyone in the inner sect had seen that tremendous battle. Therefore, every one of them had a very deep impression of him.

Then again, Jiang Chen was already sent to Evil Abyss by the pavilion master. Why would he suddenly appear here now? Additionally, all of them thought that he was already as good as dead.

“That’s right. It’s me.”

Jiang Chen nodded and spoke. He seemed more polite to the people of Skycloud Pavilion.

“My goodness! Is that really you? This is truly a miracle. Shouldn’t you be in the Evil Abyss right now?”

“Could it be that you have already walked out of the Evil Abyss? This isn’t possible. The Evil Abyss is just like hell. No one that has gone in has ever come out. Miraculous, this is really miraculous!”

.....

They were astounded. They knew Jiang Chen pretty well even if Jiang Chen didn’t know any of them. They couldn’t believe that the person who was sent to Evil Abyss had emerged in front of their face.

“What? He is Jiang Chen?”

“My God! So he’s really that Jiang Chen. Finally, I’m able to see his real face. He had been sent into Evil Abyss, but now he’s here. This indicates that he has succeeded in exiting the Evil Abyss alive. How did this abnormal being do it?”

“No wonder he’s so terrifying. It turns out that he’s Jiang Chen. None of these undead creatures could stop him. Do you all see that the two early Divine Immortal black corpse ravens were killed by him so easily? They didn’t even have the chance to resurrect. How long was he in Evil Abyss? How could he improve his strength to such a terrifying level that he could kill Divine Immortal creatures with ease?”

.....

No one wasn't surprised by it as Jiang Chen's name was too resounding in One-Line-Sky, making it hard for anyone not to know him. However, ever since he entered Evil Abyss, his reputation began to drop and later became a figure people took pity on. No matter how talented and powerful Jiang Chen was, he could only be a night-blooming cereus in One-Line-Sky.

However, Jiang Chen's return would surely set off another wave of commotion, pushing his reputation to the peak.

"You guys don't have to be this shocked. Although Evil Abyss is incomparably dangerous, it's like a casual place for me that I can enter and exit as frequently as I want. I can see that the four of you have suffered some injuries and have let some corpse Qi enter your bodies. I will now treat your injuries."

Jiang Chen said, he then channelled a large amount of wood spiritual Qi into their bodies. As the wood spiritual Qi entered their bodies, they felt an indescribable comfort, like a good rain after a long drought.

As four of them didn't suffer serious injuries, they were able to recover in a matter of seconds. They turned full-spirited and their eyes were shining brightly. They completely changed their way of looking at Jiang Chen. Apart from astonishment, there was also a trace of gratitude. In any case, Jiang Chen had saved their lives. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen today, they were afraid that they would have taken the path to death.

"Brother Jiang's means are really extraordinary. I'm impressed. My name is Wang Yang, a core disciple of Skycloud Pavilion. Thanks you, Brother Jiang, for saving us today. Otherwise, our fate would be unimaginable."

Wang Yang approached Jiang Chen and cupped his fists, expressing his thanks.

"Thank you for saving our lives, Brother Jiang." The other three hurried forward and thanked.

Chapter 1273 - The Growing Sphere of Influence

They were terrified to the extreme. They couldn't help being impressed and shocked by the man who just walked out of Evil Abyss alive. As Jiang Chen had saved their lives, a strong feeling of gratitude filled their hearts. Taking into consideration that they were all disciples of Skycloud Pavilion, it was necessary for them to stay united in such a place.

“As you're all disciples of Skycloud Pavilion, I should save you all. This ancient tomb is full of danger. Every one of you has to be careful,” Jiang Chen said; then turned his gaze back to the path ahead.

“We'll become Senior Brother Jiang's followers from now on.”

Wang Yang said, changing the way he address Jiang Chen to 'Senior Brother Jiang'. He was an early Divine Immortal core disciple that had a very high position in Skycloud Pavilion. With his status, he shouldn't address a Heaven Immortal inner sect junior as 'senior brother', but Jiang Chen wasn't an ordinary person. In the world where only the strong ones were respected, everything was decided based on the strength of the person. Furthermore, Jiang Chen had just saved their lives and this had convinced him to accept Jiang Chen as their leader.

“You guys just made a very wise decision, knowing that following Jiang Chen would at least guarantee your safety,” Fu Hui said with a smile.

Being a close friend of Jiang Chen, he would naturally feel more dignified and had a sense of superiority towards others.

Hua La La...

At this moment, another wave of sound was heard, setting the nerves of everyone on edge. No doubt, those were the sounds of

flapping wings. It sounded so creepy that everybody's soul started to tremble.

“Senior Brother Jiang, another big flock of black corpse ravens are coming.”

Wang Yang said with a face full of worries and fear. The further one got in the path, the stronger the black corpse ravens become, which made them even harder to deal with. Considering the fact that the ravens were invincible due to their ability to resurrect, it rendered all of them helpless.

But when they saw Jiang Chen's composed face and recalled the scene when Jiang Chen killed those black corpse ravens, it eased their tensed emotions. They believed that they would be safe by staying beside this perverted genius.

“Just the right time.”

Jiang Chen revealed a smile at the corner of his mouth. To him, the more undead ravens and the stronger their cultivation base, the better it was. Now, the twenty-first level of the pagoda had begun to condense and his cultivation base was approaching the half-step Divine Immortal realm. As long as the number of black corpse ravens was enough, it wouldn't be a problem for him to advance to the half-step Divine Immortal realm and the pagoda to fully condense the twenty-first level.

Ga...Ga...

Tremendous amount of black corpse ravens rushed over, at least hundreds of them. Jiang Chen swept through the flock and discovered a few ravens that were at the Divine Immortal realm. The leader had already reached the scary intermediate Divine Immortal realm. None of the human experts in this area would be able to fight these this flock of flying creatures.

The blood on the birds' beak was still fresh, which indicated that plenty of human experts had been attacked and died under the

sharp beaks of these ravens.

The black corpse ravens let out a harsh scream. Each pair of their red eyes were glowing with merciless light: that was the Qi of death.

“Humph!”

In front of such a powerful flock of black corpse ravens, Jiang Chen remained indifferent. He let out a cold humph and struck out a huge palm – the True Dragon Palm. A giant dragon claw enshrouded all the ravens. Intense flames ran through the dragon claws, turning the scene into a sea of fire.

Ga...Ga...

This was an extremely spectacular and terrifying picture. None of the black corpse ravens could escape from Jiang Chen’s dragon claw. One by one, the ravens were incinerated and dissipated. Even the mid Divine Immortal raven succumbed to it after making a few struggles.

Hundreds of black corpse ravens were wiped out by Jiang Chen in a matter of minutes. After obtaining the energy of these ravens, the twenty-first level of the pagoda began to shine and new dragon marks were forming in Jiang Chen’s body.

This scene dumbfounded everyone at the back. Whether it was the experts of Skycloud Pavilion or the rogue cultivators, none of them were able to keep their calm. Such a scene was something that they hadn’t even dreamt of. It was too horrifying. At this time, everyone stared at Jiang Chen with reverence, as if Jiang Chen had become a god. In their hearts, Jiang Chen was no longer human, but an omnipotent and godly being.

Because only Gods could do all of these things. How could an ordinary human possibly achieve all of these? Wang Yang felt that he was having some difficulty breathing. He had no idea how scary Jiang Chen had become when he saw that even the mid Divine

Immortal black corpse raven was killed almost instantly by Jiang Chen.

“Abnormal. He’s truly an abnormal being, no ordinary person can do such a thing.”

“He is an unrivalled genius and also a person with great fortune. Otherwise, he won’t be able to get out of the Evil Abyss. The future achievement of this man will be limitless. These seven days of expedition in the ancient tomb is going to be chaotic because of his presence.”

“We will follow him till the end. In this way, we will be able to ensure our safety in this ancient tomb.”

“I feel that he’s totally capable of setting up a major power in One-Line-Sky and I will be the first to join his sect.”

.....

No one wasn’t surprised; they couldn’t help it. They had never seen such a mystical person before. Many of them even felt that Jiang Chen should establish his own sect and that would certainly attract lots of people.

Unfortunately, Jiang Chen didn’t have the slightest bit of interest in those things. What he wanted right now was to improve his cultivation and strength. He had lofty ambitions and One-Line-Sky was merely a stop on his path. Once his scores in One-Line-Sky were settled, he would leave and head to the endlessly vast Ethereal Immortal Domain.

“Let’s go. The road is reaching its end. If I’m right, there will be no more black corpse ravens after this path.”

Jiang Chen said, he then led the group of people ahead in a quick speed. Along the way, they could see plenty of corpses killed by those ravens, and some experts currently besieged by those birds. Without hesitation, Jiang Chen killed those birds and saved all of them, causing the number of people that followed him to increase.

None of them who had witnessed Jiang Chen's means could hold their shock. Jiang Chen's sphere of influence was getting bigger and bigger.

Chapter 1274 - Advancing to the half-step Divine Immortal realm

“Look, it’s Jiang Chen. My God! He isn’t dead yet!”

“He’s really Jiang Chen. Wasn’t this guy sent to Evil Abyss? How can he be here?”

“He’s able to kill massive number of those undead creatures. Come and save us, Brother Jiang!”

.....

The Skycloud Pavilion disciples who were surrounded by the black corpse ravens were stupefied when they saw Jiang Chen, having the same expression like Wang Yang earlier. However, Jiang Chen’s appearance had made them see hope. To them, Jiang Chen was their savior.

Hong Long...

After killing many ravens, all the cornered disciples were freed and quickly joined Jiang Chen’s group.

At this point, there wasn’t much left to go in the path ahead. The number of dragon marks in Jiang Chen’s body had already reached the peak of late Heaven Immortal realm, leaving him only one last step before advancing to the half-step Divine Immortal realm. Once he reached this level, his combat strength would be enhanced again, making him strong enough to fight a mighty half-step Golden Immortal expert.

“Senior Brother. Quickly, look. There’s a freaking awesome man over there. He’s able to exterminate those undead beings. Let’s seek for his help now!”

Four to five young geniuses who were also trapped by the flock of black corpse ravens felt a pang of joy when they saw what was happening on Jiang Chen’s side. However, as Jiang Chen got closer

to them, their faces changed instantly.

“This man looks very familiar. It’s Jiang Chen!”

“Dammit! It’s that disastrous figure. Wasn’t he sent to Evil Abyss? How could he appear here? We have already been given the kill on sight order by the higher ups, making him the wanted enemy of our Profound Sun Sect.”

“F*ck! It has to be that Tian Muyun lying to us, saying that Jiang Chen has already entered the Evil Abyss. The truth was that he had never gone into that place.”

.....

The joy on their faces instantly disappeared when they saw that it was Jiang Chen: they were disciples of Profound Sun Sect, an arch enemy of Jiang Chen. They didn’t hope for Jiang Chen to save them. As long as Jiang Chen didn’t make things worse for them, it would be fine.

Very quickly, Jiang Chen arrived in front of these experts. He had already determined that they were disciples of Profound Sun Sect. Immediately, he struck out the True Dragon Palm, grabbing all of the experts along with the black corpse ravens.

“Jiang Chen, you bastard! What are you doing?!”

“Jiang Chen, you want to kill us?! So the truth is that you haven’t really gone to Evil Abyss. Our Profound Sun Sect will never let you go!”

“Dammit! This ferocious devil wants to exterminate us together. F*ck!”

.....

When they sensed Jiang Chen’s intention, their faces changed one by one. Compared to this devil king, they would rather face those black corpse ravens.

“You all are going to die anyway. I might as well do you a favor.”

Jiang Chen's killing intent soared. His eyes were filled with ruthlessness. The conflict between him and Profound Sun Sect was irreconcilable. He had never treated his enemies politely. He would kill these experts of Profound Sun Sect like how he killed those black corpse ravens.

Murderous? That's right. It was murderous. In this savage world, what's the use of being benevolent?

.....

“Argh...”

With a few shrill cries, the five of them ended up in a tragic death along with the black corpse ravens. None of them live.

Hiss...

This scene made a lot of them shudder in fear. Most of them had only heard of Jiang Chen's ruthless reputation before. Today, it showed that Jiang Chen had a very well-deserved reputation. It also told them that making Jiang Chen an enemy was definitely a misfortune.

“It was gruesome. The experts of Profound Sun Sect died too tragically. It seems like there's going to be great chaos in this ancient tomb.”

“That's right. Once Profound Sun Sect knows that Jiang Chen is still alive, they will surely find ways to eliminate him. This is going to cause a bloody storm.”

“I can almost imagine the great loss that Profound Sun Sect is going to suffer.”

.....

Many of them began to sigh. They had already expected that this trip in the ancient tomb would never be peaceful because of Jiang Chen's presence, the disastrous star, the peerless devil king. Every place that Jiang Chen passed would inevitably flow with blood.

Therefore, it was extremely unlucky for the disciples of Profound Sun Sect to encounter Jiang Chen here.

However, the Profound Sun Sect was after all a major power in One-Line-Sky. Those incomparably powerful half-step Golden Immortal experts of theirs had the strength equivalent to true Golden Immortal experts. To Jiang Chen, these experts were a tremendous threat.

After a while, Jiang Chen sped forward. Along the way, he had encountered a large number of black corpse ravens and some people of Huangfu Family. Without question, Jiang Chen came to their rescue, however, his main purpose wasn't to save them, but to exterminate those black corpse ravens.

For the time being, he had no grudges against the Yun Family. Therefore, he wouldn't attack and protect them. It was hard to say if they would be enemies or friends in the future, but based on the situation in One-Line-Sky, he estimated that it was likely that they would be enemies.

“Did you hear that? That person who killed those undead creatures with ease is the legendary Jiang Chen of Skycloud Pavilion.”

“Wasn't that bastard sent to Evil Abyss? How could he be here? that man is truly amazing to be able to exterminate those undead creatures. Furthermore, it seems like he only has a cultivation of Heaven Immortal realm. It sounds pretty scary when a Heaven Immortal expert could kill Divine Immortal black corpse raven so easily.”

“It seems like the ancient tomb is going to lose its peace for real this time.”

.....

The Yun and Huangfu Family had discovered Jiang Chen's identity. Their first reaction was astonishment. After all, Evil

Abyss was like a true hell, a place where one couldn't come back once one entered it.

Hong Long.....

Jiang Chen killed the last batch of black corpse ravens and led a huge bunch of people out of this seemingly endless passageway. Currently, the twenty-first level of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had already been fully condensed. The number of dragon marks in his body had already reached 650 000. After refining a massive amount of Immortal Meta Stones, he successfully broke through to the half-step Divine Immortal realm.

The number of people following behind Jiang Chen had already reached over 200 now. Apart from the 20 plus disciples of Skycloud Pavilion, the rest were rogue cultivators. Each of these rogue cultivators had a look of excitement on their faces. At first, they all thought that they were going to be finished. They had never thought that they would have the chance to walk to the end of the passageway. There was no way that they wouldn't feel delighted about it.

Chapter 1275 - The Great Unrest

Jiang Chen's pupils glowed brilliantly as if no darkness could cover them, like the stars in the night. Currently, Jiang Chen had officially advanced to the half-step Divine Immortal realm; now he was strong enough to kill any ordinary half-step Golden Immortal opponents. Of course, if that was a half-step Golden Immortal genius, he would find it hard to deal with even with the Great Divination Art. Geniuses who had reached that level had already comprehended the profound meaning of Great Luo, making their power equivalent to a true early Golden Immortal expert.

There was an insurmountable and unimaginable gap between Divine Immortal and Golden Immortal realm, but Jiang Chen wasn't afraid of this, with his current cultivation, he could already run amok in the ancient tomb. Even if he couldn't fight his opponents, he wouldn't have a problem running away. Furthermore, this was only the beginning of the expedition. Surely, he would obtain more benefits in this tomb and enhance his cultivation even more.

"Senior Brother Jiang is truly extraordinary for being able to walk out of the Evil Abyss so easily."

"I knew for a long time that Brother Jiang wouldn't die so easily. It's really a good thing for us that Senior Brother Jiang is able to come with us in this expedition. Brother Jiang's talent is surely going to outshine all the geniuses of the other three major powers."

"I, Wang Yang, am going to serve Senior Brother Jiang from now on."

.....

Each and every disciple of Skycloud Pavilion was flattering Jiang Chen, including those Divine Immortal realm core disciples. Despite their high cultivation, their combat strength was no match

for Jiang Chen – something which they were extremely clear about. Additionally, their status was also not comparable to Jiang Chen, he had another status – the true disciple of Elder Tianji Zi – a status they probably wouldn't be able to reach in their lifetime.

“Alright. Now that we have left the passageway, the front should be the interior of the ancient tomb. We will separate from here. Go and seek for your own fortune. If I encounter those who are in trouble, I will naturally lend a hand.”

Jiang Chen waved and spoke to the crowd. It wouldn't be good with if so many of them kept on following him. He himself disliked crowded situation. Besides, they had already reached the end of the passageway, the threats of the black corpse ravens had been fully resolved.

Everyone nodded after hearing this, convinced of what Jiang Chen had said. After all, they had all chosen to come and search for treasures and improve themselves. They were responsible for finding their own fortune. If they continued to follow Jiang Chen, they might be able to ensure their safety, but not their benefits.

Since the danger had already been removed, they would have to rely on themselves now. If they still insisted on staying with Jiang Chen, they might as well stay in their super safe Skycloud Pavilion.

“Brother Jiang, I will go seek for my own fortune as well.”

Fu Hui cupped his fists at Jiang Chen; then flew towards one direction. Geniuses like him also had his own thinking and decision.

Jiang Chen vanished in a flash. This gloomy tomb was like Jiang Chen's world. It didn't matter even if his identity was exposed. As long as it wasn't exposed to the outside, it was fine. In any case, he had already arrived in the interior of the ancient tomb. It was only a matter of time before a fight broke out between him and the others and thus, revealing his real identity to the four major powers.

However, Jiang Chen's comeback was a big deal to others. Words about his return would surely spread very quickly and stir up everyone in the tomb.

Many of those who chose the other passageways had arrived at the interior of the ancient tomb. They had more or less experienced dangerous situations along the way. It could be clearly seen that the current number of people had reduced by a significant amount. Those who had died along the way would stay there forever.

This was the danger in the path of cultivation. You never knew when, where, and how you would die.

When the incident about Jiang Chen's return was heard, pandemonium broke out. After being absent for more than a month's time, this terrifying genius finally emerged. Every time he appeared, he would affect the emotions of countless of people, attracting every one of their attention.

"I didn't think that Jiang Chen could walk out of Evil Abyss alive. It seems like we all have underestimated him. However, Elder Yang Shu surely won't let this matter rest if he knows that he is still alive."

"So what if he's still alive? Jiang Chen has come out of that dreadful place just by relying on his own capability. Besides, he has always been loyal to Skycloud Pavilion. I heard that along the way, he has helped all the Skycloud Pavilion disciples who were facing dangerous situation. This fact alone has given me a good impression of him."

"That's right. To Skycloud Pavilion, Jiang Chen's emergence is a good thing. It only means that his presence will create pressure to the three major powers, especially Profound Sun Sect. Being the arch enemy of Jiang Chen, they wanted so badly to shred Jiang Chen to pieces. Plus, Jiang Chen has already killed many of their disciples along the path. The conflict between them is definitely

irreconcilable.”

.....

When the geniuses of Skycloud Pavilion found out about Jiang Chen’s return, they were overjoyed. In any case, they were considered a unit and had to stick together in this ancient tomb. Furthermore, the fact that Jiang Chen had saved the other disciples of Skycloud Pavilion indicated Jiang Chen’s intention that they should all unite.

“Damn! Why hasn’t this bastard died yet? Tian Muyun must be lying! He had never sent Jiang Chen to Evil Abyss. That was just a pretense. Tian Muyun did this to buy time for Jiang Chen to grow. Plus, this bastard has also managed to sneak into the ancient tomb without anyone noticing him.”

“Humph! This time, we must make him stay here forever. We won’t give him a chance to leave this tomb. That man is just too much of a threat and grows too fast. If he isn’t gotten rid of as soon as possible, he’s going to be a major threat to our Profound Sun Sect.”

“That man has already killed a few of our fellow disciples. My younger brother was among them. This is a score that can’t be forgotten. We have to kill Jiang Chen to avenge my brother’s death!”

.....

All the experts of Profound Sun Sect gritted their teeth when they heard of Jiang Chen’s appearance. They had almost forgotten their old score after more than a month’s time, their enemy was no longer alive after all. But unexpectedly, Jiang Chen was far from dead and had even killed their comrades. How could they possibly accept this? Numerous experts of Profound Sun Sect had made up their mind to destroy Jiang Chen here, not giving him a single chance to leave this place.

Chapter 1276 - The Wondrous Rock

Apart from the people of Skycloud Pavilion, none of the other three major powers had a good opinion of Jiang Chen. No doubt, the first who reacted negatively about Jiang Chen's return was Profound Sun Sect, the arch enemy of Jiang Chen. Both the Yun and Huangfu Family didn't really have good feelings about Jiang Chen either. Jiang Chen was after all the genius of a competitor's sect. They didn't hope to see any other geniuses emerging besides from their own sect because that was a potential threat to them.

The spatial zone in this ancient tomb was amazingly huge. There were even mountains and rivers here. Jiang Chen had yet to find any valuable things as he moved across the interior of the tomb. At this moment, he missed Big Yellow's presence, that dog always had a keen sense when it came to treasures.

Although Jiang Chen was proficient in the Great Divination Art and could calculate things, he wasn't able to divine the location of the treasures. In order to find fortune in the tomb, he needed to rely mainly on his luck, and his luck had never been poor.

The current surrounding was different from the gloomy path before. The corpse and death Qi was weakening at a continuous pace whereas the spiritual Qi was rising, like it was a blessed land. Truly, this was an extremely good place for cultivation. This was something that no one had ever thought of, and it made everyone feel very excited.

In such a place, even a fool could guess that there must be existences of treasures. For a moment, every corner of the place was filled with the shadows of experts – geniuses of the four major powers and rogue cultivators. Every one of their faces were filled with exhilaration.

“Wahaha! A few high grade Immortal Meta Stones can be found here! This is intoxicating!”

“Damn! You fool! Why are you shouting so loudly after obtaining the treasure? Do you want to get yourself killed?”

“Look, what’s this? My God! this is an Immortal Sword dropped by someone, I can sense Divine Qi from it. This is, without a question, a great place. Wonderful!”

.....

All kinds of excited voices could be heard. Some were keeping their silence. Some shouted loudly as they were overwhelmed by their emotions, but immediately after that, they realized their foolish act, and they then quickly left the scene. Some said that wealth should never be revealed to the public, and this place was full of competition. If the treasure you got was targeted by some other expert, the other expert would definitely seize it the moment you let your guard down.

This was a blessed land where treasures were everywhere. To a rogue cultivator, these treasures were extremely rare. For instance, when a late Heaven Immortal or a half-step Divine Immortal suddenly got a true Divine Realm Immortal Weapon, it would be incredibly pleasant and worth celebrating.

Jiang Chen however didn’t express any interest in those items, and headed deeper into the tomb. Many geniuses of the four major powers also did the same. As they were rich in cultivation resources, they wouldn’t want to waste their time and effort on things that they didn’t need.

It had already been a half day in the tomb, but nothing precious was found. During this period, Jiang Chen encountered some creatures that were as dead as the black corpse raven. These dead creatures were incomparably strong, but compared to the black corpse raven, they were easier to deal with because they didn’t resurrect.

Killing these creatures was naturally a piece of cake to Jiang Chen, but it was impossible for him to rely on these things to

improve his cultivation or the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. As Jiang Chen already advanced, whether it was the formation of dragon marks or the levels of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, its difficulty would rise as more energy would be required. Any ordinary undead creatures and demonic devils would no longer have any significant impact on Jiang Chen's advancement.

In front of him was a summit where the top was filled with smoke and fog, just like a paradise. The entire summit was full of spiritual Qi that gave people a refreshing feeling. A place like this couldn't possibly be a tomb no matter how you looked at it.

At this time, many people had already gathered on the summit. As far as one's eyes could see, there were at least a hundred people there, including the experts of the four major powers. Despite the distance, he could still clearly feel the Qi of the late Divine Immortal experts. Those were the top core disciples of the four major powers. Every one of them were proud and arrogant beings. Being at the late Divine Immortal realm was equivalent to having the combat strength of a half-step Golden Immortal expert.

Cultivators were continuously flying towards that direction, causing this deathly silent mountain to turn rowdy.

"There's treasure in front."

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered. His Great Soul Derivation Technique could already sense the strong Qi of a treasure ahead. All those experts must have gathered there for the treasure.

His body flashed and disappeared from the scene. He moved at an incredibly fast speed, arriving on top of the summit in just a few blinks. He didn't get too close to the crowd. He just stood some distance away behind the crowd.

Swoosh.....

All of a sudden, a golden ray of light soared from the top of the mountain. The light was very strong. Everyone's eyes were fixed

on the big rock above the summit. It had the size of roughly 3 meters, radiating a dense blood Qi from the inside. This was a strange rock. Anyone could determine the extraordinary features of this rock just by using their eyes.

Hong Long.....

The wondrous rock shuddered violently all of a sudden. It wasn't intense at first, but gradually, it grew stronger and seemingly about to burst at any time.

"There's life existing inside this rock. The blood Qi inside is very strong. I have no idea what strange creature is living inside."

"The blood Qi is too exuberant. It is definitely a good treasure. If I can get my hands on this wondrous rock, the benefits will be boundless."

"That's right. The spiritual Qi here is astonishing. This is no doubt a blessed place. This wondrous rock should be some kind of treasure. Whoever can get this rock is surely going to obtain great fortune."

.....

Many of them were shocked that a strange rock suddenly emerged in this lonely mountain. Discussions about the rock immediately started. Plenty of them were wondering what might be hiding inside the rock, but judging from the strong blood Qi, this certainly isn't an ordinary rock.

"Let me see what's in the rock."

A genius from the Yun Family could no longer hold himself back. He was an early Divine Immortal expert, a core disciple of the Yun Family and a very proud young man. He struck out a huge palm, grabbing the wondrous rock.

Bang!

However, just as the young man's palm hit the rock, a powerful

energy surged out from the rock, crushing the genius palm strike.

Deng! Deng! Deng!

The disciple of Yun Family was forced to take three steps back. His face turned slightly pale.

“What?”

The disciple exclaimed. Astonishment spread across his face. His eyes were staring at the wondrous rock unblinkingly. He couldn't believe what just happened, given his own strength, he couldn't even move the rock.

Chapter 1277 - Strike

The astonishing scene stirred numerous experts around.

“What exactly is inside this strange rock? How could it launch such a powerful resistance that can even deflect the attack of an early Divine Immortal expert? Certainly, this isn’t a simple rock.”

“Amazing! I reckon that there must be an extremely powerful seal existing inside. Either the force just now came from the seal or from a powerful creature. That’s the only explanation for it.”

“The one who attacked just now was the genius of Yun Family, an early Divine Immortal expert. If he can’t even lay his hands on the strange rock, our chances of touching the rock is almost zero.”

“We won’t have a chance either way. Haven’t you noticed yet? All the late Divine Immortals of the four major powers are here. They are simply not the opponents that we can compete with. We aren’t going to obtain any benefits with them being here.”

.....

Conversations could be heard everywhere. The strange rock was too mystical for being able to deflect that attack. This indicated that the rock was an extraordinary one. It stirred up the passion of everyone, especially the geniuses of the four major powers. Each and every one of their eyes were brimming with interest.

“Very good. This is without a question no ordinary rock and this rock is first discovered by our family. So, we should own every bit of it. I, Yun Ying, will now subdue this wondrous rock.”

The leader of the Yun Family spoke loudly. Judging by his tone, it sounded as if the rock was already theirs, totally ignoring everyone’s existence. The one who spoke was a core disciple of Yun Family, a late Divine Immortal expert. A genius like him was incomparable and had unparalleled position amongst the core disciples. So naturally, his tone would sound domineering and

without any half-step Golden Immortals around, his words were equivalent to the will of the whole Yun Family.

“Yun Ying, don’t fool around here. With so many of us here, do you think that your family can wrest away this wondrous rock?”

A genius of Huangfu Family spoke coldly. He was Huangfu Zhi. His cultivation was on par with Yun Ying. He was also the representative of the Huangfu Family for now. The four major powers of One-Line-Sky had never gotten along well. Among them, Skycloud Pavilion and Profound Sun Sect were the enemies of each other, while the Yun and Huangfu Family had never stopped competing with one another. There had been conflicts between the disciples of the two different major powers during normal days. So when they finally met here face to face, it was even more impossible for them to compromise with each other because that would be equal to giving away their face.

“The wondrous rock has no owner. So it’s absolutely impossible for Yun Family to claim ownership of it. Don’t even think about it Yun Ying.”

An expert of Skycloud Pavilion spoke. He was called Guo Jie, also a core disciple of his sect. At this time, he had chosen to express his stand. As the wondrous rock was an extraordinary and rare item, he couldn’t just watch the rock fall into the hands of the other three major powers.

“In my opinion, we should just have a fair competition.”

The genius of Profound Sun Sect, named Wu Wei, spoke, the last of the big four who hadn’t expressed his opinion. Apparently, the geniuses of the four major powers wouldn’t compromise.

Hong Long...

The movement inside the mysterious rock was getting stronger, it started to shake more intensely. The golden light pillar above the sky became brighter. The rogue cultivators knew their own

limitations. They knew that there was no way they could compete with these geniuses. As such, plenty of them had treated this scene as a show.

“In that case, why don’t the four of us attack and subdue this rock together. As for the treasure inside the rock, we will divide it into four portions when we return, what do you say?”

Yun Ying said, putting forward an excellent idea. It could be seen that he didn’t want to waste time and knew that a stalemate would not solve the problem. With the geniuses of the four major powers present, Yun Family’s thought of owning the wondrous rock was no longer possible.

The other three leaders exchanged glances with one another, understanding the reason behind Yun Ying’s words. They knew each other’s strength pretty well. If they really started a fight here, they were afraid that it would be hard to determine a winner. In that case, it would be better to reach a compromise first until they subdued the wondrous rock.

“There’s no need for such nonsense. Let’s attack it now.”

Huangfu Zhi then struck, grabbing the wondrous rock with his big palm.

Seeing what happened, the other three attacked immediately, refusing to be the last. It was imaginable how powerful the Qi of the joint attack of four late Divine Immortal experts. Massive amount of energy converged and formed a huge net, wrapping around the wondrous rock.

This overwhelming energy was like being crushed by Mountain Tai. When the energy landed on the wondrous rock, a dazzling golden light pillar began to tremble.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

A more intense buzzing sound rang out from the rock and a flood of energy suddenly surged out of it, charging towards the massive

energy struck by the four experts.

Hong Long...

Hearing only the roar of the impact, the pool of energy was swept away by the force coming from the rock, after that, the rock got even more agitated.

“How did that happen? We can’t even take down this strange rock?”

“What exactly is inside this rock?”

They were flabbergasted. There was a look of shock on their faces. The reaction of the wondrous rock was beyond their imagination, even though they had already imagined that the rock would counter-attack. They had never thought the counter-attack would be so intense.

“We’ll try again. I don’t believe that this rock can last for long.” Yun Ying said.

At this time, Jiang Chen who was not far away from the scene was gazing at the wondrous rock unblinkingly. He was circulating the Great Soul Derivation Technique to examine the rock and was very intrigued by it.

“There has to be a living thing existing inside. It has to be a divine creature. I can feel its divine Qi and bloodline. This type of bloodline is incredibly noble, almost equivalent to my true dragon bloodline. How could such a treasure fall into someone else’s hands?”

Jiang Chen was astounded. Then quickly, he struck when the second attack of the four failed again.

Hong Long...

A huge blood-red dragon claw descended from the sky, heading towards the wondrous rock. This dragon claw appeared at the precise moment when the attack of the four experts were

destroyed by the wondrous rock.

“Who is it?!”

Yun Ying and the other three clamored; then turned their gaze to the unknown person who was standing not far away from them.

Chapter 1278 - Uprooting

Given their cultivation, they wouldn't have a problem locating the source of the attack. Plus, Jiang Chen didn't even try to conceal himself. The Qi from his body rushed to all directions.

Jiang Chen's eyes turned cold. He focused all of his concentration on the wondrous rock, totally ignoring Yun Ying and the others. Since he had already decided to strike, he wouldn't hold anything back. Even though it wouldn't be easy to subdue the mysterious rock, he had to try it anyhow.

"It's Jiang Chen! He's Jiang Chen! It's his attack!" someone in the crowd yelled.

Most of them had only heard Jiang Chen's name and hadn't seen him in person. So, the one who exclaimed must have seen Jiang Chen before, exposing the identity of Jiang Chen on the spot.

That, however, did not concern Jiang Chen. Ever since he entered the ancient tomb, he no longer intended to hide his identity.

"Bastard! So you are that Jiang Chen. I've been looking for you everywhere. I had never expected that you will reveal yourself in my face. How dare you seize that rock!? totally courting death!" Wu Wei spoke.

His inability to move the rock had stirred his anger. Now that Jiang Chen had appeared all of a sudden, and trying to seize it, how could he not go mad?

"So he's Jiang Chen. He sure isn't an ordinary person."

Guo Jie of Skycloud Pavilion smiled. He felt relieved knowing that the attacker was Jiang Chen. In any case, Jiang Chen was a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion, one of his comrades. If he chose to oppose his own comrade like the others did because of one mysterious rock, he wouldn't be able to survive well in Skycloud

Pavilion.

Yun Ying and Huangfu Zhi were both infuriated, glaring at Jiang Chen with a face full of fury. They had no good feelings about Jiang Chen. This bastard had been famous since his arrival, snatching away all the chances for them to be noticed. As if that wasn't enough to infuriate them, he only hid in the dark but wanted to seized the rock all of a sudden.

The current Jiang Chen wouldn't put these experts in his eyes; he could already feel the powerful force that was about to rush out of the rock. It seemed like the force would become stronger when it faced stronger enemies. The force was chaotic, high, mighty, and inviolable.

Killing, reverence, and all the ancient Qi were mixed together. This astonished Jiang Chen, convincing him that the existence inside this rock was absolutely extraordinary.

What's actually living inside? If I go head on, I'm afraid that I won't be able to subdue it even if I expend all of my energy, however, I can feel a strong bloodline from it. This bloodline is incomparably noble, almost similar to my true dragon bloodline. Why don't I use my bloodline to test it, it can probably win the recognition of the creature inside and obtain the rock.

Jiang Chen thought. He could already see that it was basically impossible to move the rock just by using brute force. He was clueless about what was living inside the rock. He was afraid that even a Golden Immortal expert wouldn't be able to move this rock. At this point, he could only use his own bloodline, as this wondrous rock contained a very noble bloodline, almost comparable to his true dragon bloodline.

Hong...

Jiang Chen's body flashed, instantly transforming in his dragon form, arousing his bloodline completely. There were two purpose in using his dragon-form. One was to stimulate his bloodline,

hoping to obtain the recognition of the being inside the rock, and lastly, to deal with Yun Ying and the others. Geniuses like them weren't like any average late Divine Immortal experts. Even with Jiang Chen's current condition, he would need to use his dragon form in order to kill half-step Divine Immortals easily.

"It's this transformation again. He sure is that hateful Jiang Chen."

Seeing this, a lot of people from Profound Sun Sect started to curse. Even though they hadn't seen Jiang Chen before, they were no stranger to his transformation technique.

The moment Jiang Chen stimulated his bloodline, he could clearly feel that the rock moved even more restlessly, but its resistance had vanished all of a sudden. This exhilarated Jiang Chen. It seemed like his trick had worked. As the bloodline inside the rock was too noble, it wouldn't allow any being with a lower bloodline to touch it. Apparently, Jiang Chen's true dragon bloodline was a noble one and it could get the recognition of the rock almost instantly.

"Jiang Chen, you want to reap the benefits out of us? If you don't stop what you are doing, you are going to get yourself killed."

Wu Wei bellowed, then struck out an incomparably brilliant palm at Jiang Chen, like a red cloud carrying a massive force that could topple and overturn mountains and seas.

Jiang Chen darted his dragon eyes. Cold light glowed in his eyes. He then spoke coldly, "You'd better not offend me."

After that, he raised another palm and launched a powerful True Dragon Palm. A huge dragon claw with endless divine power collided with Wu Wei's attack in a blink.

Hong Long...

The sky and earth trembled. Wu Wei's attack was simply too vulnerable in front of Jiang Chen, it was crushed and destroyed,

leaving nothing behind.

Deng... *Deng...* *Deng...*

In the void, Wu Wei felt a powerful shock and was forced several steps back.

“What?”

This scene made many people around exclaim. Wu Wei himself, needless to say, was very shocked. Yun Ying and the other two were gaping at the scene, then stared at Jiang Chen in disbelief. Although that attack wasn't Wu Wei's full-fledge attack, the fact that Jiang Chen was able to counter it while subduing the wondrous rock was already fascinating. This couldn't be said that Wu Wei was weak. It was only because Jiang Chen was too strong.

“How could this be possible? He's merely a half-step Divine Immortal expert. How could his strength reach such an extent?”

“Motherf*cker! Another extremely abnormal bastard has emerged in One-Line-Sky.”

“Jiang Chen is just like what the rumors said. He's too heaven defying. One should know that Wu Wei is the best among his peers in the core disciples, but he's no match for Jiang Chen.”

.....

Everyone was shocked. Even Guo Jie of Skycloud Pavilion looked dumbfounded. He knew that Jiang Chen had stirred the entire Skycloud Pavilion, but he hadn't imagined that Jiang Chen could grow so much in just more than a month's time. If Wu Wei was no match for Jiang Chen, it could also mean that he was no match for Jiang Chen as well.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen harrumphed coldly, not giving Wu Wei a second glance. He exerted his force and pulled. The wondrous rock would surely be uprooted from the ground.

Chapter 1279 - Reckless Act

“Not good, he’s going to take it away!” Yun Ying screamed.

“Damn! I have no idea what technique this bastard used. The rock didn’t resist at all. We can’t just watch him seize it away before our eyes. Yun Ying, Huangfu Zhi, let’s stop him together!”

Wu Wei gritted his teeth. The combination had excluded Guo Jie automatically, he was after all, a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion, one of Jiang Chen’s allies. They should feel grateful that Guo Jie didn’t lend Jiang Chen a hand just now.

“Let’s do it.”

Yun Ying and Huangfu Zhi agreed to it without hesitation. They knew that the mysterious rock was far beyond their imagination and no one would be willing to let it go, especially Wu Wei. Jiang Chen had been the Profound Sun Sect’s sworn enemy. If he was able to kill Jiang Chen using his own hands, he would certainly contribute greatly to his sect.

Swoosh!

Before Wu Wei could move, a silhouette blocked his path. This man was precisely Guo Jie.

“Get out of the way, Guo Jie. This has nothing to do with you. I hope you won’t interfere with it!” Wu Wei said fiercely.

“Is this a joke? Jiang Chen is a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion. Besides, don’t you think that it’s too shameless for you three to fight one junior?”

Guo Jie chuckled. He couldn’t just stand idly by. He wasn’t a fool. He could already see Jiang Chen’s potential, and influence and status in numerous disciples’ hearts. Currently, Jiang Chen’s strength had already surpassed his. If he used this opportunity to build a good relationship with Jiang Chen, it would benefit him tremendously in the days to come.

Furthermore, if Guo Jie chose to stand idly by at this time, the others were going to gossip about him.

“The two of you, go and stop Jiang Chen. I will handle Guo Jie,” Wu Wei said.

An Immortal Sword appeared in his hand and was swung forward. Guo Jie gave a cold smile, drew out his Immortal Weapon, and defended Wu Wei’s attack. Both the Skycloud Pavilion and Profound Sun Sect had been hostile to each other. So naturally, they wouldn’t show any mercy when it came to battle.

However, the two of them were on par in terms of strength and talent, it wouldn’t be possible to conclude the battle within a short period of time. Therefore, the heavy responsibility of dealing with Jiang Chen would fall onto Yun Ying and Huangfu Zhi’s shoulders.

The two of them had witnessed Jiang Chen’s scariness, so they wouldn’t dare have the slightest bit of neglect in their attacks. They were holding an Immortal Weapon. They struck out hundreds of millions rays of brilliance towards Jiang Chen. Apart from Jiang Chen being their target, they also wanted to use this attack to cut off the connection between Jiang Chen and the rock.

Jiang Chen had immersed himself in subduing the mysterious rock. There was no intention of fighting in his mind right now, but as the two kept lunging forward, he had to defend himself. He struck out a palm casually. It was the Golden Dragon Seal. Three golden dragons roared their way out and surged towards Yun Ying and Huangfu Zhi like real and lifelike dragons.

Roar...

The roars were trembling. The powerful Golden Dragon Seal represented the ultimate force of attack and adding that Jiang Chen was now in his dragon form, Yun Ying and Huangfu Zhi didn’t stand a chance even if the both of them joined forces and used their Immortal Weapons. They were sent flying away by the Golden Dragon Seal. This round of exchange alone was able to tell

that both combatants were at two totally different levels.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The wondrous rock started to shake. Although Yun Ying and Huangfu Zhi were no match for him, the powerful attack just now had disrupted his communication with the existence inside the rock. This had given him lots of trouble.

“If the both of you attack again, you will die instantly.”

Jiang Chen promised coldly. Killing intent surged out from his body. Everyone could see that Jiang Chen had gotten angry this time. His words were like the decree of a monarch, not allowing even the slightest bit of disobedience. Many of them were convinced that if those two attacked again, Jiang Chen would definitely kill them.

“Dammit! How could this bastard be so strong?”

Yun Ying had the urge to cough up blood. Despite their joint effort, they were still forced back by Jiang Chen’s massively strong attack. This made them understand the gap between them and Jiang Chen. They couldn’t do anything to Jiang Chen even if they attacked again.

“This man is so powerful. What do we do now? Could it be that we would just let it go?”

Huangfu Zhi’s face darkened. He was reluctant to let this matter rest, but Jiang Chen’s power had exceeded their imagination. None of them could stand a chance if they continued the fight. He was in a dilemma right now.

“We can’t just let Jiang Chen get the mysterious rock so easily. Although we can’t beat him, we can stop him from getting the rock. We’ll continue to distract him. Soon, the commotion here will certainly attract those powerful experts over. By then, Jiang Chen would surely die for sure. This man is too heaven defying and poses too much of a threat. He isn’t only a threat to Profound Sun

Sect, but also to your family. Tian Muyun alone has already created a lot of headaches for us, his wild ambitions are certainly going to bring us serious threats. If another talent like him rises, it's only a matter of time before One-Line-Sky is taken over by Skycloud Pavilion." Yun Ying said.

Coldness was seen in his eyes. His decision to kill Jiang Chen was firm. Both the Yun and Huangfu Family were sworn enemies to each other, but because of the wondrous rock, they had joined forces for the first time to fight Jiang Chen. They weren't fools. They could already see Jiang Chen as a threat. If sufficient time was given to this heaven defying genius, annihilation would be the only thing awaiting them.

"Alright. Let's do this."

Huangfu Zhi nodded in agreement. Getting rid of a genius like Jiang Chen as soon as possible was certainly beneficial to them as that was equivalent to uprooting a potentially huge threat.

Clatter...

Both of their Immortal Weapons rippled once more. This time, they didn't attack Jiang Chen, but the rock instead. As long as they could provoke the rock to counter-attack, Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to obtain it, and as long as they could stall him until stronger experts arrive, Jiang Chen would be finished.

"Courting death!"

Jiang Chen was truly angered. He had already warned these two earlier that another attack would be equivalent to their death, but these ignorant bastards didn't heed his warning. In that case, he wouldn't be lenient to them anymore!

If Yun Ying and Huangfu Zhi thought that Jiang Chen didn't have the ability to kill them, they were terribly mistaken. This was a mistake that they couldn't even regret.

Howl!

An ear-piercing sound was heard. The Heavenly Saint Sword materialized in Jiang Chen's hands and was swung. The metal was indestructible. It charged forward like a true dragon, slashing at Yun Ying!

Chapter 1280 - Two Consecutive Kill

The aura of the Heavenly Saint Sword was unparalleled. Jiang Chen channeled his energy into the sword. To Yun Ying, this was a lethal strike. The sword slashed out a ray of brilliance, arriving at the top of Yun Ying's head in a blink.

“Not good!” yelled Yun Ying.

Though he had initially thought that Jiang Chen was already a very powerful genius, he still had underestimated this unparalleled genius. Jiang Chen's power had far exceeded his imagination. At least, this was a strike that he couldn't withstand. The instant the sword was slashed at him, he felt a threat that he had never felt before. That was the threat of death. His entire person was enshrouded by the shadow of death, and his soul began to tremble violently.

At this time, Yun Ying finally felt totally horrified, an unprecedented fear.

“Ah!” Yun Ying bellowed.

Out of helplessness, he raised his sword to block the attack. As Jiang Chen's attack was too fast, all of the Qi in his body had already been locked by the Heavenly Saint Sword, giving him no place to run.

Therefore, if he didn't block this attack, he would certainly die. As a matter of fact, his fate had already been decided the moment Jiang Chen slashed out this ferocious attack.

Clang!

Yun Ying's Immortal Sword clashed with Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword. His sword simply couldn't resist the Heavenly Saint Sword and was cut into halves. A Divine Realm Immortal Sword was destroyed just like this. This shocking scene created a huge impact in everyone's mind.

Pu Chi!

However, after Yun Ying's sword was broken, the Heavenly Saint Sword's momentum didn't slow down. With a mournful cry, Yun Ying was slashed in half by the sword. Blood gushed out crazily.

Although Yun Ying was a late Divine Immortal expert and a supreme genius in Yun Family, but compared to Jiang Chen, he certainly wasn't a match. Jiang Chen was, after all, no longer a late Heaven Immortal, he is already a half-step Divine Immortal. By cultivating the dragon transformation skill, every advancement that he made would enhance his combat strength by many folds.

"What?"

This scene made countless of people exclaim. Everyone's soul started shaking. Who would have thought that Jiang Chen would be so powerful to such an extent? One should know that the one who died was a late Divine Immortal genius, a supreme expert of Yun Family. Even if he couldn't defeat Jiang Chen, he shouldn't have been killed so easily. This was too much for everyone to stomach, it had just overturned their perception of things.

"My God, a late Divine Immortal genius is killed so easily by Jiang Chen! How powerful is Jiang Chen exactly?"

"He's invincible. He's the greatest genius that I have ever seen, but by killing Yun Ying, he has seriously offended the Yun family."

"That's right. He has already offended Profound Sun Sect and Yun family. If he doesn't let Huangfu Zhi go as well, he will also make Huangfu family his enemy. By then, he's going to have the three major powers as his sworn enemies. I'm afraid that only Jiang Chen could offend so many major powers in such a quick pace."

.....

Many people were horrified. This scene was overly shocking. However, they had already heard of Jiang Chen's means before.

They knew that there was nothing in this world that Jiang Chen wouldn't dare to do and no one he didn't dare to kill. Judging on Jiang Chen's looks, it seemed like making the three major powers his sworn enemies didn't concern him at all.

Yun Ying's death had caused a great impact to Huangfu Zhi. At this moment, Huangfu Zhi's attack had already hit the mysterious rock, causing the rock to tremble even more intensely, but because Jiang Chen's bloodline was very powerful. It had created a strong resonance with the creature inside the rock. So the rock had yet to send out any counterattack.

Huangfu Zhi was dumbfounded after the attack. Seeing Yun Ying's tragic death instantly stirred a strong sense fear towards Jiang Chen. His first reaction was to escape. He had already seen Jiang Chen's ruthless expression, knowing that his attack had infuriated Jiang Chen even more. At this time, he couldn't care about his reputation anymore. If he didn't run now, he would have no chance of escaping later and would surely die immediately under the sword of Jiang Chen.

The rock was naturally a treasure, but compared to his life, a treasure was nothing no matter how precious and rare it was. Without delay, his body flashed and flew upwards after attacking.

“Thinking about running away at this time? Too late!”

Jiang Chen growled. He had already eliminated Yun Ying and wouldn't mind killing another one. Anyway, he would certainly make the three major powers his enemies once he got his hands on the rock. Killing one enemy was no different than killing two.

Hua La...

The sharp sword was slashed out once more. The sword light moved like flowing water, then wove into a big net enshrouding Huangfu Zhi within.

Death Qi instantly covered Huangfu's whole body. It was a

chilling sensation from head to toe. He struggled to resist, but was unable to break Jiang Chen's sword net.

"No, Jiang Chen! Don't kill me! Killing me won't do you any good. Huangfu Family isn't someone you can afford to offend!"

Huangfu Zhi screamed in a pleading tone. One's mind would be at its weakest when one was in the face of death. In order to stay alive, he would do whatever it takes.

"Die."

Jiang Chen was cold and ruthless. The threat of Huangfu Family didn't concern him. After killing Tian Muyun, he would rule the entire One-Line-Sky anyway. Therefore, it was only a matter of time before he and Huangfu Family clashed.

"Argh..."

Another terrible wail was heard. The late Divine Immortal Huangfu Zhi was ripped apart by the sword Qi of the Heavenly Saint Sword. Another young genius had fallen, leaving only a mist of blood and a ruined corpse. Jiang Chen's means were violent to the extreme.

"Awesome."

Guo Jie, the one who had been battling intensely with Wu Wei took a gulp of saliva in his mouth. Despite being a disciple of Skycloud Pavilion, he was still stupefied by Jiang Chen's means. He wouldn't have thought that Jiang Chen had already reached such a powerful extent. This created a sense of fear in his soul now. He was now crystal clear that if Jiang Chen could kill those two geniuses so effortlessly, it would be the same if Jiang Chen were to kill him, which made him grateful for not having any conflicts and being on the same side with Jiang Chen.

"Motherf*cker!"

Wu Wei swore; then turned and fled. Jiang Chen was too powerful. This young genius was just like a devil king, irresistible.

Now, even Yun Ying and Huangfu Zhi were killed by him. The moment the wondrous rock was subdued, Jiang Chen would undoubtedly spun over and take his life as well. So escaping right now was the wisest choice.

“Guo Jie, don’t let him escape,” Jiang Chen said to Guo Jie.

Chapter 1281 - Diao Yong of Profound Sun Sect

Jiang Chen didn't have any intention of letting Wu Wei go. It was just that Wu Wei was slightly further away from him that he couldn't send him a lethal blow. Besides, he had to focus on subduing the mysterious rock, so he had asked Guo Jie's help to take care of Wu Wei temporarily.

Jiang Chen had already formed a resonance with the bloodline of the creature inside the rock using his True Dragon Bloodline without being disturbed by anyone. Soon, he would be able to subdue the wondrous rock completely. Guo Jie would need to keep Wu Wei occupied for a minute. Once he finished his task, he would eradicate the trouble for good.

“Roger.”

Guo Jie nodded. Although he was ordered by Jiang Chen, he didn't have any discomfort or reluctance. This was a world in which the strong were revered. Jiang Chen had conquered Guo Jie using his strength and means, making Guo Jie willingly follow his instructions.

Swoosh!

Guo Jie was extremely fast. He caught up with Wu Wei and blocked Wu Wei's path in just a few blinks. He unleashed all of his Qi, sealing all the possible routes of escape.

“Guo Jie, get out of the way and I will owe you this favor.”

Wu Wei was scared. His mind started to race when he saw Guo Jie going after him. He knew Guo Jie's strength. If they both got entangled in a serious fight, there wouldn't be an end to it. Once Jiang Chen finished his task on hand, it would be his turn to die. Yun Ying and Huangfu Zhi were the real example. He didn't have the confidence to deal with Jiang Chen anymore.

“I don’t need you to owe me a favor.”

Guo Jie chuckled. He didn’t strike, only standing before Wu Wei very calmly, blocking all of Wu Wei’s paths.

“Dammit!”

Wu Wei was infuriated and was forced to strike. He only hoped that his could help him escape now, he was going to fight for a chance to survive. As for the mysterious rock, it didn’t matter to him anymore. Besides, fighting Guo Jie was a lot better than fighting Jiang Chen. The only thing he could do now was to force Guo Jie back with all his might so that he had time to escape. However, he knew that this was going to be extremely difficult.

One should know that both Wu Wei and Guo Jie had similar cultivation, which made the battle between the two of them a draw every time. Currently, Guo Jie’s mood was very relaxed while Wu Wei looked flustered. Under such circumstance, Wu Wei had already lost the advantage, making Guo Jie an even harder enemy.

The scene of a great battle between the two of them was spectacular. On one side, Jiang Chen was trying his best to subdue the wondrous rock while the others paid attention to the battle. Each disciple of Skycloud Pavilion were cheering excitedly whereas the disciples of the other three major powers had sour faces, especially the Yun and Huangfu Family, their leaders had just been killed. Although they were gnashing their teeth with hatred, none of them dared to attack Jiang Chen.

They weren’t fools. Given Jiang Chen’s overwhelming strength, attacking him was no different than provoking Yama. Even the battle between the two leaders, they couldn’t do anything other than watch like a bystander.

Despite seeing Jiang Chen and the wondrous rock, neither of them had the intention to snatch the rock away unless they were eager to die.

All they could do now was pray that their strongest experts will arrive. As Jiang Chen was too powerful, only their half-step Golden Immortal experts could suppress him. Each of the four major powers had three or four half-step Golden Immortal taking part in this expedition, but because the ancient tomb was too big, the experts had already been separated from the group.

Of course, this was because those experts didn't think there would be a mysterious rock here. If they knew about this, a serious fight would have broken out from here, a treasure like this might not exist in the deepest region of the ancient tomb.

Putting aside the fact of what would be living inside the rock, if someone could refine the treasure inside, his or her cultivation would certainly improve by leaps and bounds.

Hong Long...

Finally, the rock no longer had any resistance. Jiang Chen's True Dragon Bloodline was now fully recognized by the wondrous rock and thus, finally subdued it. An opening in the void was torn open. It swallowed the wondrous rock and closed.

The moment the rock vanished, the golden light pillar above the summit disappeared as well, returning the peace to the whole mountain.

"It's over."

Seeing Jiang Chen successfully subduing the wondrous rock, Wu Wei rolled his eyes and was utterly disappointed. He knew in his heart that Jiang Chen was certainly going to come after him next. His fate wouldn't be any better than Yun Ying's and Huangfu Zhi's.

"Die now!"

Jiang Chen bellowed, and slashed the Heavenly Saint Sword at Wu Wei. He was right. Jiang Chen didn't even think of letting him go. Since Jiang Chen had already killed so many, he wouldn't mind

killing one more. In Jiang Chen's eyes, all of them were his enemies, and the best way to deal with his enemies was to kill them.

“Halt!”

Just at this moment, a loud clamor reverberated from the sky. Everyone turned towards the source of the voice and saw a sturdy-looking youth descending from the sky above. He was moving very fast. His red hair made him look glamorous. The Qi exuded from his body was earth-shattering. This youth was definitely many folds stronger than Wu Wei.

“Senior Brother Diao Yong. Save me quick!”

The pale face of Wu Wei immediately revealed a glimmer of joy when he saw this savior.

“It's Diao Yong of Profound Sun Sect. This man was half-step Golden Immortal expert. He's a renowned genius of Profound Sun Sect, the best of the best. I never thought he would actually appear here. I'm afraid that Jiang Chen won't be a match for him.”

“This is getting more and more exciting! Even a half-step Golden Immortal has arrived. It seems like the good show is about to start.”

“Jiang Chen is able to kill Yun Ying and the other leaders so easily. I'm wondering if he can deal with this Diao Yong, if so, I think it won't be that easy. Diao Yong is after all a half-step Golden Immortal expert. He isn't comparable to any of those late Divine Immortal experts.”

.....

Diao Yong's appearance had caused a great commotion. The ancient tomb had only been opened for half a day and something this big had already happened. First was Jiang Chen's appearance and the other was the emergence of a half-step Golden Immortal genius. The scene was going to be exciting.

Jiang Chen darted Diao Yong a cold glance. The Heavenly Saint Sword didn't slow down the slightest bit and was slashing towards Wu Wei.

“Courting Death!”

Seeing this, Diao Yong was enraged. He struck out a ray of immortal light, rushing towards Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword.

*Yama – King of Hell

Chapter 1282 - Fighting the half-step Golden Immortal

Diao Yong felt incomparably furious. How dare Jiang Chen kill his comrades in his presence? That was completely ignoring his existence; he couldn't accept that! Being a supreme half-step Golden Immortal genius, no one amongst the young generation of One-Line-Sky wouldn't give him face.

“You can't save him.”

Jiang Chen didn't even look at Diao Yong. He wasn't denying the mightiness of this half-step Golden Immortal, but saving Wu Wei from his hands was virtually impossible.

Hong Long...

A surge of energy was channeled into the Heavenly Saint Sword. It roared and turned into a blood-red dragon, appearing on top of Wu Wei's head in a blink. As the sword was too fast, there was no time for Diao Yong to respond.

“No.....”

Wu Wei roared with strong reluctance, but it was useless. His fate had already been completely doomed the moment he infuriated Jiang Chen. He had no other choice but to die.

“Argh...”

Wu Wei let out a scream as he was cut into halves by the Heavenly Saint Sword. His whole body was ripped apart by the sharp sword Qi. The whole scene was so bloody that many didn't dare to look at it directly.

The instant Wu Wei was killed, Diao Yong's attack reached Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen made another slash, colliding with Diao Yong's Immortal Light.

Hong Long...

The collision was massive. It almost destroyed the void above. And a powerful gale was created after that.

Deng! Deng! Deng!

The formidable shockwave pushed Jiang Chen three steps back.

“Sure enough, a genius half-step Golden Immortal is powerful. I’m no match for him even with my dragon-form. But if I use the Great Divination Art, I still can fight him. If I use the Frenzied Dragons Leaves the Pool of the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes, I can get rid of this bastard,” thought Jiang Chen.

He was able to immediately identify the gap between himself and Diao Yong. With his current cultivation, he could fight any ordinary half-step Golden Immortal, but Diao Yong wasn’t an ordinary opponent.

A genius like Diao Yong was capable enough to fight a normal early Golden Immortal expert. So naturally, Jiang Chen was no match for him, but with Jiang Chen’s incredible trump cards and means, it wasn’t impossible for him to eliminate this opponent.

However, Jiang Chen couldn’t use such a trump card until it was the critical moment. The consumption was too great after all. Once he used it, he would fall into a temporary weakened state, putting him in a dangerous position.

It didn’t concern him even if he couldn’t win this match. At least, Diao Yong still wasn’t a terrifying opponent. If Jiang Chen wanted to escape, Diao Yong wouldn’t be able to stop him.

“Son of a b*tch!”

Diao Yong cursed. His cold and furious eyes were fixed on Jiang Chen. How dare this abominable Jiang Chen kill an expert of Profound Sun Sect in front of him? That was a complete act of disrespect. Across the entire One-Line-Sky, everyone who didn’t give him face had already died and Jiang Chen wouldn’t be an exception.

“Jiang Chen, you have the nerve to kill Wu Wei in my presence! Were you challenging my dignity?” Diao Yong bellowed.

“What dignity do you have? Put away your high and mighty sense of superiority. You are no worse than a fart in front of me.”

Jiang Chen showed his middle finger to Diao Yong. What this bastard said was ridiculous. The grudges between him and Profound Sun Sect had long been irreconcilable. Yes, Diao Yong was powerful, but he had yet to reach the extent where it could terrify Jiang Chen.

After hearing Jiang Chen’s words, many of them couldn’t help rolling their eyes and suck in a breath of cold air.

It was mad and bold. Today, they finally witnessed what arrogance meant. They were afraid that Jiang Chen was the first one who dared to speak to Diao Yong in such a way. Plus, Jiang Chen definitely had the qualifications to do so.

“How arrogant! Since you’re courting death, I’ll grant your wish. However, before you die, hand over that rock first and I will consider giving you a nice and quick death without putting you through any kind of torment,” Diao Yong said.

In his point of view, it was already considered very kind of him to offer such conditions to Jiang Chen after Jiang Chen killed so many people of Profound Sun Sect. This was a score that could never be settled without killing the enemy. Furthermore, killing Jiang Chen and getting the wondrous rock would earn him a huge credit in his sect.

“You have so much of nonsense. I would like to see if you have the ability to kill me.”

Jiang Chen chuckled sneeringly, totally disrespecting Diao Yong. This severely affected Diao Yong’s self-esteem. It was his first time seeing such a wild and barbaric person.

“A thing that knows neither death nor life! I would also like to

see what makes you capable of fighting me.”

Diao Yong was angered. He no longer wanted to waste any more time on speaking nonsense with Jiang Chen, and struck out a palm. A terrifying energy condensed and formed a dark cloud, pressing downwards at Jiang Chen all of a sudden.

The attack of a genius half-step Golden Immortal was massive. For a moment, the entire void was filled with formidable energy, allowing everyone to feel a rush of pressure and discomfort.

“Jiang Chen, be careful. Diao Yong is a half-step Golden Immortal expert. He’s very hard to deal with,” Guo Jie reminded.

“Guo Jie, bring the others away from here immediately.” Jiang Chen whispered to Guo Jie.

He didn’t intend to stay and fight with Diao Yong for long. The matter today had already aroused the notice of many experts. He was afraid that Diao Yong wouldn’t be the last expert to appear here. If this battle lasted for another period of time, more experts would come over and this was something that Jiang Chen didn’t want to see. He had come to the ancient tomb for benefits. Before getting sufficient benefits, he didn’t want to have a life-and-death struggle with those geniuses.

As such, Jiang Chen didn’t want to get entangled in a battle with Diao Yong, however, he was afraid that Diao Yong would later vent his anger on Guo Jie and the other experts of Skycloud Pavillion. That was why he asked Guo Jie to bring the other disciples away. He would stay here and stall Diao Yong for some time until every disciple of Skycloud Pavilion were gone from this map. Then, he would leave elegantly, leaving Diao Yong alone with his wrath.

Alright. Take care of yourself.

Guo Jie nodded. He was a smart person, he naturally understood Jiang Chen’s thoughts and worries. Immediately, he led the disciples of Skycloud Pavilion away, leaving Jiang Chen and Diao

Yong in the battlefield. After seeing Jiang Chen's incredible means, Guo Jie was no longer concerned about him. He believed that given Jiang Chen's ability, even if Jiang Chen couldn't fight Diao Yong, Jiang Chen wouldn't have any problem escaping.

Howl!

The Heavenly Saint Sword uttered another howl. The sound of the dragon's roars was earth-shaking. A ray of sword light seemed like a terrifying heavenly river. It impacted fiercely with Diao Yong's dark cloud.

Hong Long.....

It was another earth-shattering collision. It trembled the earth so much that countless countless felt numbness in their scalp.

Chapter 1283 - Exploring the Secret of the Wondrous Rock

Guo Jie led a bunch of disciples to leave the scene. The situation of the battle behind had nothing to do with them anymore. The reason why Jiang Chen stayed back and fought Diao Yong was to buy them time. This was something they well understood. This matter alone made them feel touched because Jiang Chen didn't only care about his own life, but also theirs at the critical juncture.

If Jiang Chen left immediately, it was imaginable how furious Diao Yong would become. By then, the disciples of Skycloud Pavilion would naturally become the target of Diao Yong's wrath. In the ancient tomb, it wouldn't be unreasonable if Diao Yong slaughtered them all. Moreover, Skycloud Pavilion and Profound Sun Sect had been the greatest of enemies.

Back in the battle, Jiang Chen and Diao Yong were fighting fiercely. Every attack sent by Diao Yao was fiercer than the last. Although he had succeeded in suppressing Jiang Chen every time, he wasn't able to get rid of Jiang Chen completely. He felt as if Jiang Chen had a way that could predict his attacks and was able to interrupt him before he could sent out a complete attack. Such a situation made him incredibly stifled.

“Is this bastard only a half-step Divine Immortal? How could he be so terrifying?”

Diao Yong gritted his teeth. He couldn't believe and accept this fact. He couldn't believe that a half-step Divine Immortal would be this powerful even if Jiang Chen was a genius. He just thought that having this kind of power was way too monstrous.

“Like I said, you are still far from being qualified to kill me.”

Jiang Chen spoke arrogantly. By using the Great Divination Art, he was able to get entangled with Diao Yong and confuse his

opponent.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, don’t you get overly arrogant. I have yet to use my true skills. Killing you wouldn’t be difficult at all.”

Diao Yong was exasperated. He felt that it was time for him to use his powerful trump card to destroy Jiang Chen now. Given his cultivation and identity, it would be a joke if he couldn’t take down a half-step Divine Immortal.

“Haha, unfortunately, I’m not interested in your games anymore.”

Jiang Chen laughed. He kept his Heavenly Saint Sword and a pair of brilliant Flaming Wings sprouted behind his back. With a flutter of the Flaming Wings, he vanished into the sky far away.

“Where are you running to?!”

Seeing the situation, Diao Yong was infuriated. He immediately turned into a ray of light and chased after Jiang Chen. Today, he had personally come here but was not only was he not able to secure the wondrous rock, he also couldn’t save the life of his fellow disciple. If he let Jiang Chen escape, he would certainly lose so much of his face.

Diao Yong’s speed was quick. After all, he was a mighty half-step Golden Immortal expert. In his point of view, it would totally be impossible for a puny half-step Divine Immortal to escape his grip.

However, what happened next made Diao Yong spurt out blood, he had lost Jiang Chen’s trace after chasing Jiang Chen for just a while. It was like Jiang Chen had vanished like a ghost. Not even a hair of Jiang Chen could be found.

“Dammit! How could that bastard be so fast?”

Diao Yong felt gloomy to the extreme. He might as well gave up hunting down Jiang Chen. Now that he couldn’t even find a trace of Jiang Chen, what was the use of chasing him?

When Diao Yong returned, he found out that the disciples of Skycloud Pavilion were all gone, making his anger roll inside his stomach.

“Jiang Chen, don’t let me see you again. It will be your death next time. I must make you die very unpleasantly.”

Diao Yong said ferociously. Judging from his looks, he couldn’t help wanting to tear Jiang Chen to pieces.

What happened here today would surely spread across the ancient tomb like a storm. Jiang Chen’s name would reach an all-new peak. It was without a doubt that Jiang Chen had offended not only Profound Sun Sect this time, but also the other two major powers, the Yun and Huangfu Family.

“Jiang Chen is just too bold. He has offended the three major powers this time. I’m afraid he wouldn’t be getting out of this ancient tomb alive this time.”

“That’s right. The geniuses of the three major powers have already regarded him as a thorn in their flesh that needs to be eliminated quick. According to others, there are true Golden Immortal experts who have entered the ancient tomb as well. If Jiang Chen were to encounter those experts, he’s going to die for sure. Although he’s very talented, his cultivation is still too weak. He’s merely a half-step Divine Immortal.”

“I don’t think so. Jiang Chen is a person who carries great luck. He won’t die so easily. He has done so many great things and is still alive. However, don’t you all forget that he has just walked out of the Evil Abyss alive. If he could even survive that hell-like place, what’s so hard about this ancient tomb?”

“That’s not possible. I personally feel that Jiang Chen hasn’t gone into the Evil Abyss at all. It was just a ruse created by Tian Muyun. I don’t believe that there’s anyone who can walk out of Evil Abyss alive.”

.....

The ancient tomb was destined to lose its peace because of Jiang Chen's presence. Many of them thought that it would be hard for Jiang Chen to leave the ancient tomb alive this time, as he had offended too many people. If his enemy was merely Profound Sun Sect, it might be a different case.

Some thought that Jiang Chen wasn't sent to the Evil Abyss from the beginning. After all, the ruthless and violent name of Evil Abyss had already been planted deep in the minds of the people. Neither of their faces wouldn't change whenever they talked about Evil Abyss. It wasn't easy for someone to succeed in exiting the Evil Abyss alive.

The wondrous rock was no doubt a very unusual treasure. Jiang Chen was afraid that such a divine treasure wouldn't exist even at the center of the ancient tomb. As the saying goes, even an innocent man would arouse the jealousy of others if he was holding a precious jade. Therefore, Jiang Chen would surely become the target of many experts at this point.

In a deserted land, Jiang Chen reverted back to his human form. He looked around and began to study the wondrous rock.

Jiang Chen's body flashed and went inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Currently, the wondrous rock was placed inside the spatial zone of the pagoda. Surprisingly, this rock remained calm and quiet all these while.

"The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a supremely divine item. The pagoda itself possesses a great True Dragon Bloodline. The wondrous rock must have felt the incredible bloodline inside, which is why it remained so silent and calm. However, I wonder what kind of existence is living inside the rock."

Jiang Chen's curiosity was stirred. In spite of his experience and knowledge, he wasn't able to decipher the secret of the wondrous rock. He might as well circulate the Great Soul Derivation

Technique. All of his spiritual energy turned into a storm, rolling towards the rock.

However, what surprised Jiang Chen was that it seemed like there was a mysterious strength inside the rock. This energy had formed into a defensive barrier, blocking his spiritual energy from exploring any further.

Chapter 1284 - The Depths of the Ancient Tomb

Jiang Chen tried once more, sweeping the rock like a hurricane, but the result was the same. The mysterious power in the wondrous rock was too great. The barrier would only get stronger when it was confronted by stronger force. So, Jiang Chen didn't have a chance.

"I wonder what this mysterious energy is, but the bloodline inside must be powerful. If I guess correctly, the creature inside may have a very powerful divine beast bloodline, a true ancient creature."

Jiang Chen guessed. Although he didn't know what the bloodline inside was, he could feel a sense of familiarity from it. The level of the bloodline was on par with his True Dragon Bloodline and Big Yellow's Dragon-Horse Bloodline. What aroused Jiang Chen's curiosity was that why a rock with an ancient beast bloodline would be in the ancient tomb, but this aspect alone could tell that the ancient tomb had been in existence for a very long time.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen's eyes lit up as he had formed new idea about this wondrous rock.

"If I use my dragon transformation skill to refine this living creature, I'm afraid the benefits that I'll obtain will be unimaginably boundless. My cultivation will also improve by leaps and bounds," Jiang Chen whispered in his heart.

But this kind of idea was immediately rejected as soon as it flashed through his mind. He wanted to find out what this mysterious creature was. He was certain that the creature inside was gestating and the internal environment of the wondrous rock was well suited for its survival.

More importantly, Jiang Chen was uncertain whether or not he

could refine the being inside the rock as there was an unknown force protecting it. Today, he had obtained the approval of the rock because of the True Dragon Bloodline and the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. If he forcefully refined it, it was very likely that he would receive an intense backlash, and he wasn't sure if he could withstand it.

To put it in another way, this was akin to a gamble, a huge gamble. Jiang Chen liked gambles but he was unwilling to make this bet this time. Apart from the high risk factor, it was also because of the resonance created between him and the creature which had given him a good feeling about it. Because of this, Jiang Chen had decided to wait for the baby creature to be born as he wanted to see what kind of divine beast was it.

In the meantime, Jiang Chen wasn't in a hurry to leave the place as there was still sufficient time before the doors of the ancient tomb closed. After the incident with the wondrous rock, many experts must be looking for him now.

Although his foundation wasn't affected much during the vast advancement previously, he still needed some time to fortify his foundation.

This desolate mountains seemed like a perfect place. No one would come here. Even if there were people here, it would be hard for them to detect the Qi of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Currently, he was hiding in the Pagoda that had flawlessly combined with the void.

The fortification of his foundation took two days. This was similar to the result he expected two days ago. When words about the incident of the wondrous rock spread, the experts of the three major powers were seeking for him everywhere.

There were plenty half-step Golden Immortal geniuses like Diao Yong that had entered the tomb. They were supposed to continue to search for treasures in the depths of the ancient tomb, but now,

seeing Jiang Chen had become their first priority. They wanted to kill Jiang Chen for two reasons. First was for revenge and second was to obtain the rock.

But Jiang Chen was nowhere to be found in these two days, like he had never appeared before. In many people's point of view, Jiang Chen must have hidden somewhere, which they understood why he would do so. Jiang Chen had, after all, offended too many people and all his enemies were very powerful. It wouldn't be normal if he didn't choose to hide.

Now, Jiang Chen was ready to strike again. Three days had passed since he entered the ancient tomb. He had yet to go to the depths of the place, so he was still clueless about what secret were hidden within.

He felt refreshed after he walked out of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Immediately, he flew at his maximum speed towards the depths of the tomb.

Not long after he flew out of the barren land, he happened to meet a person, who was Guo Jie. His face was filled with delight when he saw Jiang Chen. He then flew over to greet Jiang Chen.

"Brother Jiang, many experts are looking for you everywhere. I didn't expect to see you here," Guo Jie said.

His gaze had changed compared to last time. It was brimming with respect. That day he had witnessed Jiang Chen's means. Subsequently, he knew that Jiang Chen had escaped from Diao Yong's grip. These had gained Jiang Chen an unparalleled status among the young generation.

"It doesn't matter. It isn't easy for them to kill me. By the way, anything big event going on within these two days?" Jiang Chen asked.

"There weren't any big events, but many have obtained a lot of fortune in the ancient tomb. However, apart from your wondrous

rock, there wasn't any earth-shattering treasure or secret found in this tomb. I wonder what kind of people have left behind in this place. Oh, I heard that another hidden door has been opened. This door directly connects to the interior of the tomb. I was about to go there." Guo Jie said.

"Uh?"

Jiang Chen looked surprised. Sure enough, this ancient tomb was really unusual. No one knew that a door to the interior of the tomb would be hidden in the void. Now that it was opened, it went without thinking that it would link to the depths of the tomb as well. It was a must for everyone to go and explore more, as many of their ultimate purpose was after all reaching the deepest region of the tomb.

"Brother Jiang, let's go together." Guo Jie said.

"We'd better split up."

Jiang Chen shook his head, disapproving going together with Guo Jie. He liked to have freedom. Plus, he was now the common enemy of the majority of the experts. Guo Jie wouldn't benefit by following Jiang Chen.

Guo Jie nodded. He wasn't an idiot. He knew incredibly well why Jiang Chen was unwilling to go with him.

Jiang Chen followed after Guo Jie left.

Not many experts could be found in this huge spatial zone. It seemed most of them had gone into the interior of the tomb after the hidden door was opened. Jiang Chen moved fast, and found the door that led to the depths of the tomb.

It was an illusory door the height of three meters. Jiang Chen scanned the door using his divine sense. After learning that no seal was placed on the door, he entered right away.

"I would like to see what kind of treasures will exist in the depths of the ancient tomb." Jiang Chen smiled and strode forward.

Chapter 1285 - Dried Corpse Puppet

On the other side of the doorway was a scene totally different from the outside. The atmosphere here was rather oppressive, giving everyone a sense of breathlessness. This made Jiang Chen frown. However, there were no death and corpse Qi detected in the air.

Not long after flying in the air, he discovered a huge area filled with black palaces. The top of each palace was circular, like a gloomy grave. Every palace was a few dozen miles away from each other. The size of this area was enormous. As far as the eye could see, there were a few hundreds of black palaces. Each of which consisted a layer of suppressive atmosphere.

Jiang Chen could see silhouettes moving back and forth between every palace, and felt the combat Qi from all directions, indicating that there were innumerable cultivators searching for treasures.

“If I’m not mistaken, one of these palaces must be where the ancient tomb is. However, these palaces have the exact same look and Qi. It won’t be an easy thing to identify the true ancient tomb. The suppressive atmosphere here must be caused by the ancient tomb itself. Apart from it, these palaces should also have plenty of treasures which I can’t miss.”

Having discerned the key of the matter at first glance, he immediately flew towards a palace in front of him.

Hong Long...

“Argh...”

He could already hear the wails of combat even before entering the palace. Despite the potential treasures inside these palaces, there were also lots of dangers within. There might even be undead creatures like the black corpse ravens.

In front of the palace was a dozen rogue cultivators battling with

a dried corpse. That's right. It was a mummified corpse with a pair of empty eye sockets. It was lifeless, but for some reason it could move. It was extremely powerful. There were already dead bodies scattered all over the ground. The shriveled hand of the dried corpse was holding a heart dripping with blood. The stench of blood exuded from it was nose-stinging.

“This is a puppet.”

Jiang Chen muttered. It was a dried corpse puppet, a puppet controlled by some kind of force here. The puppet itself was a killing machine.

Jiang Chen swept through the surrounding palaces and found out that every palace have these kind of puppets. The strength of the puppets varied in every palace and this aroused Jiang Chen's interest.

“It seems like there are treasures hidden in these palaces and the purpose of these puppets was to guard their respective palace. Different level of puppets indicates different value of treasures.”

Jiang Chen guessed. Such a guess was undeniably accurate. All the palaces in front looked exactly the same and the real ancient tomb was hidden amongst them. As for the dried corpse puppets, no one knew how long it had existed. Puppets like this would accumulate strength and become more powerful overtime, as they could actively absorb the death and corpse Qi here to enhance themselves.

It was conceivable that every palace here had a hidden treasure, and the stronger the puppet, the better the treasure.

Thinking about this, Jiang Chen decided to act. He made a stride in the air, arriving in front of the palace and struck out his palm. The huge palm landed precisely on the dried corpse puppet which was fighting a dozen of cultivators.

Bang!

A dreary sound was heard. The supposedly powerful puppet was smashed to pieces by Jiang Chen's palm and died on the spot.

The rogue cultivators were stunned. They hurriedly spun and saw Jiang Chen walking towards them.

"It's Jiang Chen!" someone exclaimed.

Now, Jiang Chen was no longer a stranger to many of them. Every one of them backed a few steps to make way for Jiang Chen to enter the palace.

Neither of them were fools. Despite their desire to obtain treasures, they couldn't give away their lives, and competing with Jiang Chen for treasures was exactly similar to digging a grave for themselves.

Jiang Chen entered the palace in a flash without paying attention to the fearful eyes of the rogue cultivators. The inside was littered with some Immortal Weapons. The grades of these weapons weren't very high. The weapon with highest level was only a peak Heaven Rank. Besides that, there was nothing else.

Upon seeing this, Jiang Chen couldn't help shaking his head. He turned and came out of the palace. He glanced casually at the rogue cultivators and said flatly: "Take the treasures inside and divide them amongst yourselves."

After he finished speaking, he immediately left. Those Immortal Weapons were of no use to him, so he might as well leave them to the rogue cultivators. As these cultivators always had difficulty in getting sufficient cultivation resources, these weapons would surely help them a lot.

The rogue cultivators were dazed for a moment before they got delighted. Jiang Chen had left an extremely good impression in them.

"This Jiang Chen is not bad. He's more powerful than those arrogant geniuses of the major powers. Despite his monstrous

talent, he didn't look down on any of us."

"That's right. He has killed the dried corpse puppet and left the treasures inside for us."

"That's because the treasures inside didn't attract his interest. However, this Jiang Chen has always been nice. Despite his ruthlessness and devilish behavior, he is very kind to rogue cultivators. I heard that he had saved many rogue cultivators like us in the passageway of the tomb."

"There's no need to discuss further. This is the kindness of Jiang Chen. Let's go in and see what's in there."

.....

More than a dozen of them were rushing into the palace. These treasures might be unattractive to Jiang Chen, but it didn't mean that they wouldn't attract their interest as well.

Jiang Chen kept his Qi and began to scan the entire palace back and forth while heading towards the depths of the tomb. He was hoping to find the location of the true ancient tomb as soon as possible, just like the other super geniuses.

As the Great Soul Derivation Technique was being casted constantly, invisible spiritual energy was drifting in the air. All of a sudden, a familiar scent was caught by his spiritual Qi.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen's eyes fell on one of the palaces like a sharp blade. It was where the familiar scent came from.

"This Qi is extremely familiar, but I can't recall what it is. I'll go and check it out."

He turned into a breeze and reached the front of the palace. This palace was no different from the other palaces, but apparently, the familiar Qi came directly from this place.

*Hong... *Hong...*

He could feel the battle roaring from inside the palace. Given his perception, he could already sense the powerful combat waves inside. He was sure that the attacker wouldn't be an easy opponent.

Jiang Chen lowered his Qi to the minimum and slowly approached the gates of the palace. He saw two incomparably strong dried corpse puppets battling a young man intensely. When Jiang Chen's gaze fell on that young man, a hint of a sneer was shown in his eyes.

“Diao Yong.”

Jiang Chen smiled coldly, admitting that it is really a small world.

Chapter 1286 - Immortal Execution

As the saying goes, enemies often crossed each other's path. This was similar to what was about to happen in the palace.

There were two things that surprised Jiang Chen. First was the strength of the two dried corpse puppets. Each of them had the strength of a half-step Golden Immortal expert, but due to these puppets not having any combat skills and could only use physical attacks, and Diao Yong's true combat strength being way stronger than a half-step Golden Immortal, it gave Diao Yong plenty of advantage in battle. It would definitely not be a problem for him to eliminate these two puppets.

The second thing that surprised him was the structure of the palace. The intensity of the battle of these three half-step Golden Immortals were extreme. The combat waves alone contained unparalleled destructive force, but the palace was still intact and no damage was found.

This didn't indicate the incapability of these three Golden Immortals, but how incredible the expert who built these ancient palace was.

Although Jiang Chen was still clueless about how powerful the master of this ancient tomb was, after being in the tomb for three days, he was sure of one thing – the creator of this place would never be a mere Immortal King who had mastered the puny spatial law.

He guessed that not even a mighty Immortal Emperor could have such an ability.

It seems like Tian Muyun and the others have underestimated this ancient tomb. Even master wasn't able to accurately divine this. This ancient tomb would never be a legacy of an Immortal King. I wonder what kind of secrets were hidden in this ancient tomb.

Jiang Chen thought to himself, realizing that the ancient tomb wasn't as simple as he had imagined.

Diao Yong didn't notice Jiang Chen's presence as he was busy fighting the two puppets. If he saw Jiang Chen, he would have changed his target immediately. Currently, he wanted so badly to eat and flay Jiang Chen alive. He had yet to settle down since the incident two days ago.

The other palaces only had one puppet, but there were two in this palace and both of them were of half-step Golden Immortal strength. This fact alone showed how valuable the treasures inside were. At least, these treasures would be greater than those Heaven Rank Immortal Weapons.

Moreover, the familiar scent that Jiang Chen felt came from the inside. Jiang Chen circulated the Great Soul Derivation Technique, unleashing his spiritual Qi to scan the surroundings. Then, he saw a broken sword fluttering back and forth at one corner of the palace. The top of the sword was radiating rays of light. The body of the sword was trembling. Although the broken sword seemed tattered, it could fly by itself, as if there was a spirit in it.

“Broken sword.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He finally understood what the familiar Qi was. This broken sword was no stranger to him. Back in Xuan Yang City, Big Yellow and him had obtained a broken sword, and later on, they acquired another two. So now, there are already three fragments of the broken sword in Big Yellow's possession.

This broken sword had the exact same Qi as the previous fragments that were now in Big Yellow's hands. That was the Qi of origin. He was almost certain that these four fragments were the pieces to form a whole sword, just like the seven fragments he used to forge the complete Heavenly Saint Sword.

It seems like this fragment is more spiritual than the fragments that Big Yellow has. If these four fragments could be forged into

one, this fourth piece will be the most crucial one and plays the biggest role. However, I don't have any clues about the origin of this broken sword and why it appeared in Saint Origin World.

Jiang Chen was surprised and somewhat puzzled. The origin of the broken sword was strange, but there was one thing that he could be sure of – the power of the broken sword would perfectly be wielded by Big Yellow.

No matter where the broken sword came from or what kind of secret it contained, he was certain that this fourth fragment was a very precious treasure, as it was guarded by two half-step Golden Immortal corpse puppets. If it was any other treasure, Jiang Chen might pass. If he could get this broken sword for Big Yellow, it would be highly likely that Big Yellow would be able to craft a super Immortal Sword.

Apparently, Diao Yong had already discovered the potential of this treasure with his eyesight, even though he didn't know what rank this piece of broken sword was. But the fact that this broken sword was guarded by these two dried corpse puppets proved that this was a precious treasure.

“En? There are words on the broken sword.”

Jiang Chen's keen perception suddenly found out two ancient characters 'Immortal Execution' inscribed at the side of the sword.

That's right. Despite its rusty surface, the rust was still unable to cover these two domineering words. It was the dominance that was akin to ruling the entire world. In the Immortal World, only a few people had the courage to use these words.

Bang!

At this moment, a puppet finally succumbed to Diao Yong's fierce attacks and was crushed to pieces. The other puppet was seriously wounded and would soon be destroyed by Diao Yong as well.

“Get lost!”

Diao Yong bellowed. Countless rays of light shot out from his palms towards the puppet. This was a force of destruction.

“Time to act now.”

Jiang Chen flashed and slipped into the palace like a ghostly figure. His target was the fragment of the Immortal Execution sword. He could already imagine that this strike of Diao Yong was going to destroy the puppet completely. If this fragment fell into Diao Yong’s hands, troubles would certainly arise.

Hong!

Diao Yong’s attack landed on the puppet, shattering the mummified body on the spot and turning it into some remnants. Meanwhile, Diao Yong detected an uninvited guest in the palace and had gotten furious. No one in the ancient tomb would dare to steal the treasure that he wanted, however, no other expert could be found in the surroundings of the palace. None of them would be willing to provoke this unruly man.

Jiang Chen ignored Diao Yong. He grabbed the Immortal Execution Sword, slipped into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and turned to Diao Yong with a smile.

“It’s you, Jiang Chen!”

Diao Yong almost spurted out blood when he saw that it was Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, I didn’t think that you would dare to show up in front of me. If you hand it and the wondrous rock to me, I will perhaps spare your life. I swear to god that this will be your last chance. You won’t have a second chance to live this time.”

Diao Yong was infuriated. He had never wanted to kill someone so badly before. Jiang Chen was the first.

Chapter 1287 - Killing Intent

Diao Yong's Qi had completely locked on Jiang Chen's. He was determined to kill Jiang Chen this time. In this encounter, he would never leave any room for Jiang Chen to escape.

The reason he had yet to make a move was because the wondrous rock and broken sword were still in Jiang Chen's hands. Needless to say, the wondrous rock would definitely bring him boundless benefits. As for the broken sword, it was discovered by him first and he had fought hard to kill the two puppets in order to obtain the sword. How could he possibly let someone reap the fruits of his labor?

"I don't really care about the chance you are talking about, Diao Yong, let me tell you something. You better not offend me. If I were you, I would just step aside and let me leave. I'm also giving you this last chance," Jiang Chen said plainly.

Now that everyone was looking for the true ancient tomb in the depths of the spatial zone, he didn't want to waste time with Diao Yong here. After all, killing Diao Yong wouldn't be easy.

"Haha..."

After hearing Jiang Chen's words, Diao Yong was stunned for a while before bursting out into laughter, like he had just heard the funniest joke in the world. He laughed so hard that tears almost trickled down from his eyes. Although he admitted that Jiang Chen was powerful, Jiang Chen was still far from reaching the level where he could intimidate him.

"Jiang Chen, you sure are arrogant, but you also have to understand that you aren't even qualified to be arrogant before me. I have already given you the chance, but you still don't know how to cherish it. In that case, don't blame me for being impolite. I'm going to kill you myself. The wondrous rock and the broken sword will be mine eventually."

Diao Yong's killing intent soared up to the sky. He could already see that Jiang Chen was a troublesome person. It was undoubtedly impossible to force Jiang Chen to hand over the wondrous rock and broken sword with threats. Therefore, he decided to kill Jiang Chen.

“Whatever.”

Jiang Chen sneered and flew out of the palace.

“You are leaving? Jiang Chen, are you treating me as invisible?”

Diao Yong was furious. A wave of Qi burst out from his body to form a curtain of energy which sealed the exit completely.

“Jiang Chen, you can't escape today. If you kowtow before me now, I will grant you a quick and short death.” Diao Yong said maliciously.

He was in a good mood right now. In his point of view, Jiang Chen had already been cornered. There was no way that he could escape. He always liked the feeling of turning his enemy into his prey.

“It seems like I really don't have a choice now.”

Jiang Chen's eyes shone with a cold light. Originally he didn't want to be entangled with Diao Yong, but this Golden Immortal dude was unwilling to let him go. In that case, he wouldn't be lenient anymore. At first, he was afraid of Diao Yong, but in reality, he just didn't want troubles.

At this moment, Diao Yong had succeeded in arousing Jiang Chen's fury and killing intent. Soon, he would be greeted by a violent storm.

“That's right. You don't have a choice. You can only choose to die.”

Diao Yong had a sneer plastered on his face. He then grasped forward with his huge palm. A terrifying energy converged into an

invisible mountain, falling onto Jiang Chen.

Hong...

Jiang Chen's body twisted and transformed into his dragon form. His eyes turned blood-red. At the same time, the Five Elemental Spheres spread out, enshrouding the whole palace. The commotion of this battle would surely be great and he didn't want anyone to notice it.

More importantly, Jiang Chen was going to reveal his secret now, a secret that no one should know.

He struck out the True Dragon Palm, colliding with Diao Yong's attack. A tremendous energy rolled everywhere, but because of the layer of the Five Elemental Spheres, it would be very hard for anyone outside to notice it. What surprised both Jiang Chen and Diao Yong was that the structure of the palace was pretty solid. The building remained intact despite the frenzied shockwave.

Deng! *Deng!* *Deng!*

Diao Yong was still stronger. In this impact, Jiang Chen retreated three steps before stabilizing himself. He could feel his blood and Qi turning chaotic and a discomfort that he couldn't describe, but such shock was nothing to Jiang Chen. He could recover instantly with just a rush of his wood spiritual Qi.

"Jiang Chen, although you have heaven defying powers, you are still no match for me. I suggest you to stop resisting and hand over the wondrous rock and broken sword." Diao Yong said arrogantly.

"Is that so?"

A cruel smile was plastered at the corner of Jiang Chen's mouth. He turned his palm and a huge sparkling golden dragon-shaped halberd materialized. This was an incomparably strong combat halberd. The Qi exuded from it was frightening.

Diao Yong's facial expression changed dramatically, he could already feel the terror of this weapon as there was a strong Qi of

Great Luo coming from it. It was a peak level true Great Luo Immortal Weapon , which was very close to King Immortal Weapon. Such a powerful Immortal Weapon was definitely a true treasure.

But immediately, his face darkened once more, he realized that this weapon was just like the combat halberd said in the legend.

“Isn’t this...the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd? The combat halberd left behind by Ouyang He? How could it be in your possession?”

Diao Yong widened his eyes, he couldn’t believe what he just saw. He wouldn’t have thought that Jiang Chen would have such a powerful trump card. The Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd was the weapon of Ouyang He, so it had a great reputation in One-Line-Sky.

“That’s right.” Jiang Chen said flatly.

“That means you were the one who stole the Regenerative Lotus?”

Diao Yong suddenly recalled the Regenerative Lotus on One-Line Mountain, the shock on his face intensified. That day, the case about the theft of the Regenerative Lotus was left unsolved. Not even the One-Line Eight Immortals could figure it out. So in the end, they had forgotten about it, and no one had ever imagined that this legendary weapon would appear once more.

There couldn’t be too many coincidences in the world. Diao Yong was almost sure that Jiang Chen must be related to the theft of the Regenerative Lotus.

“That’s right. I was the one who took the Regenerative Lotus.”

Jiang Chen’s tone was plain. As a matter of fact, Diao Yong’s fate had already been decided the moment Jiang Chen took out the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd.

“Good, very good, Jiang Chen! You have the nerve! How dare you

trick even the One-Line Eight Immortals and steal the Regenerative Lotus?! It seems like taking you down is going to earn me a huge credit.”

Diao Yong suddenly felt excited. He was too confident about his own strength. He wasn't afraid at the sight of the combat halberd anymore. He thought that a puny half-step Divine Immortal wouldn't have the ability to exert the full power of this Great Luo Immortal Weapon.

Chapter 1288 - Extinguishing Diao Yong

Weng... *Weng...*

The Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd let out a buzzing sound and shook violently in Jiang Chen's hand. One after another, the dragon imprint on the halberd started to move restlessly. Jiang Chen's dragon marks turned turbulent. Massive energy was being channeled into the halberd.

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered with a blood-red light, filled with killing intent. Diao Yong's fate was already doomed the moment the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd emerged. The current Jiang Chen was no longer the Jiang Chen who had just cultivated the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes. Given his half-step Divine Immortal strength, he was already strong enough to exert the second level of Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool, which was much more powerful compared to the first level.

Of course, exerting the power of the second level meant larger consumption, but it wasn't Jiang Chen's concern. There were no other person here anyway. He had already exposed the trump card that he shouldn't have exposed, so he must kill Diao Yong with this one strike.

If the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd was exposed to the public, it would greatly affect him. By then, everyone would be able to associate him to the stolen lotus. He wouldn't be able to find a place to reside anymore and the One-Line Eight Immortals would surely personally hunt him down.

Clang!

Diao Yong's facial expression changed slightly, as if he could already feel the pressure coming from the halberd and Jiang Chen's power. He had already fought Jiang Chen before, so he knew how strong Jiang Chen was. Now that Jiang Chen was holding a Great Luo Immortal Weapon, even if he couldn't fully

exert its full power, this attack could never be underestimated.

He drew out his combat weapon. It was a long and black spear. The runes on the body of the spear indicated its uniqueness. But this Immortal Weapon had yet to reach the Great Luo level. It was merely a peak Divine Immortal Weapon. Great Luo Immortal Weapons were rare. Normally, not even early Golden Immortal experts would possess a Great Luo Immortal Weapon. Furthermore, not everyone could specifically craft a Natal Weapon for themselves like Jiang Chen.

Although Diao Yong was a genius of Profound Sun Sect, he didn't possess any Great Luo Immortal Weapon. In any case, the long spear that he was holding was still an unusual weapon.

“Jiang Chen, die now!”

Diao Yong bellowed. The combat spear in his hands trembled and produced a screeching sound. The tip of the spear thrust forward at maximum speed, like a poisonous serpent, at Jiang Chen.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen was fearless; the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd had been ready for this. As soon as Diao Yong attacked, Jiang Chen lunged. The halberd in his hand moved like an aquatic dragon, creating a beautiful arc in the void. The tip of the halberd had an indistinct silhouette of a ferocious dragon.

Bang!

The speed of the two were so fast that the impact ended in a blink. The extremely powerful shockwaves rushed to every corner of the palace. Lines of fissures began to appear on the walls as well.

Despite the big commotion here, no one from the outside could sense it because of Jiang Chen's Five Elemental Spheres.

*Deng... *Deng... *Deng... *

At this time, Diao Yong was forced to take several steps back. His

back hit the wall of the palace. His hand was trembling along with the combat spear. There was a trace of blood at the corner of his mouth. The collision was so great that it affected the flow of his blood and Qi.

“Not possible! How can you exert such a powerful strength from the Great Luo Immortal Weapon?”

Diao Yong was startled. The astonishment in his heart had reached an unimaginable extent. He simply couldn't believe that Jiang Chen would suddenly become so domineering. He had never put Jiang Chen in his eyes, but now, it seemed like the outcome was going to change.

“The true power starts now.”

A cruel smirk appeared on Jiang Chen's mouth. The previous strike was nothing more than the first level of Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool. The next attack would certainly be a fierce attack. He was going to exert out all of the power of the second level. The power of this strike would surely be inconceivable, even to him.

However, there was one thing that he was certain about. That was the second level of the technique was more than enough to kill Diao Yong.

Roar.....

An earth-shattering dragon's roar broke out from the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. Under Jiang Chen's control, it turned into a complete frenzied dragon that could charge forward at any time.

“Not good.”

Diao Yong said. He was completely stunned by the momentum of the halberd. He could even feel a very strong sense of crisis, a threat to his life. It was something that he had never felt before. He was sure that the next strike of Jiang Chen would surely take away his life.

“Jiang Chen, I won’t forget what happened today. I now know that you are the thief of the Regenerative Lotus. As long as I spread this news out, you will become the common enemy of all. By then, there will be no place for you anymore in One-Line-Sky.”

Diao Yong spoke his final words and flew towards the exit of the palace within a flash. At this moment, aside from fleeing away to protect his life, he no longer had the courage to continue fighting Jiang Chen. All of his arrogance and pride had disappeared in an instant.

“Diao Yong, it’s too late for you to run away now. How could I give you the chance to expose my secret and trump card?”

Jiang Chen’s voice contained endless killing intent. His dark hair fluttered in the breeze, making him look like the great devil king of hell.

“Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool!”

As Jiang Chen bellowed, a combat dragon was sent out coming from the halberd, or it could be said that the halberd had turned into a devastating combat dragon. The might of the dragon filled the entire palace and all the spaces within the Five Elemental Spheres.

“What?”

Diao Yong exclaimed. He found out that he had already completely fallen into an invisible cage. He finally understood that Jiang Chen had already set him up from the very beginning. Jiang Chen was really determined to kill him.

Under his full strength, he wouldn’t have any problem breaking the Five Elemental Spheres, but unfortunately, Jiang Chen had already launched his frenzied dragon technique. Diao Yong had already lost his chance.

Roar.....

The horrendous dragon rushed forward. Diao Yong had nowhere

to run. He could only confront it head on with all of his might.

“Motherf*cker!”

Diao Yong screamed furiously, he lifted his combat spear to meet the frenzied dragon. However, under the powerful attack of the halberd, Diao Yong’s attack seemed pretty weak.

Hong Long.....

Diao Yong was devoured by the wild energy. The entire palace was turned into a chaotic battlefield, filled with horrifying energy waves.

Ka...Ka...Ka...Ka...

The indestructible walls couldn’t hold it anymore. Numerous cracks began to appear on the surface of the walls. They grew longer and larger, seemingly about to collapse at any moment, but due to the solid structure of the palace, the building still stood firmly despite all of its cracks and fissures.

Chapter 1289 - Golden Immortal Genius

Hong Long.....

The destructive energy that exploded from the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd continued to rage in the Five Elemental Spheres. Diao Yong was located right at the center of the explosion. The outcome could already be determined just from his agonizing wails.

The energy required for casting the Second Level of the Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool was massive. Currently, Jiang Chen's face was already pale. All of the energy in his Qi Sea was expended. Extravagant amount of Immortal Meta Stones was consumed to help restore his energy.

"F*ck! My cultivation base is still not enough. Casting the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd is too dangerous."

Jiang Chen couldn't help but curse. Despite the power of the halberd, it still couldn't be used casually as it consumed too much energy. Take the current situation for example, if there was another powerful half-step Golden Immortal in this palace besides Diao Yong, Jiang Chen would surely be killed by that expert after using this deadly strike at Diao Yong, he currently didn't have any combat strength left.

When the terrifying energy dissipated, Diao Yong's figure became visible. Even though he wasn't fully dead yet, he was not much different from a dead man. His body was dripping with blood. His Qi was in complete disorder. His vital force was continuously dissolving into the air. The combat spear that he was holding was broken in a few sections.

One should know that this was a peak Divine Immortal Weapon. Despite its solidness, it was still destroyed by the overwhelming power of the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd. This only showed how strong the power of the halberd was, and this was only the

second level of the first style of the Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool.

It was already imaginable that when Jiang Chen's cultivation got stronger, he would be able to cast the true power of the Heavenly Dragon Nine Strikes. So how powerful would that be? He was afraid that its power would even be greater than Ouyang He's peak form.

Barf... *Barf...*

Diao Yong was spurting out blood. His eyes seemed dazed as he stared at Jiang Chen. His final consciousness was telling him that he was already finished. He could already see the God of Death waving to welcome him.

The corner of Jiang Chen's mouth curled slightly upward. He strode towards Diao Yong, stretched out a forefinger and a flicker of light shone at the tip of his finger. With a Pu-Chi sound, the light shot through between Diao Yong's brows. Diao Yong fell to the ground.

After killing Diao Yong, the commotion spread outside of the palace. Jiang Chen knitted his brows. Instead of leaving the palace, he flashed into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. His current condition was unfit for any battle. He had to restore his strength quick.

"Look, this palace seems like it has been hit by some kind of powerful force. There are so many huge cracks in the wall. I wonder who fought here."

Outside the palace, some people were astounded by the condition of the palace. They had been here for quite some time now and they had gained quite an understanding of the palaces here, especially the sturdiness of the building. The fact that this palace was in this condition could only be explained that the experts inside were too powerful.

"It's Diao Yong. I saw him entering this palace earlier. He even

chased the other people off the building. So, none of us dared to get close to this palace.”

“Seems like the battle here was very intense, but judging on the situation, it should be over now. Why don’t we go in and check it out? Perhaps there are still some treasures left for us.”

.....

After a short discussion among the few cultivators, they walked into the palace carefully. When they saw what happened inside the palace, their facial expression changed drastically. The death of the two puppets didn’t surprise them as much, but the dead body lying on the ground made their mouth open wide.

“It’s Diao Yong!”

“My Goodness! Who did this? Diao Yong of the Profound Sun Sect is a half-step Golden Immortal expert. An expert like him has a combat strength that is on par with an ordinary early Golden Immortal expert. Who in the ancient tomb would have the capability to kill such a genius?

“His death was tragic. Despite his ability, he didn’t even have the chance to escape. The attacker is too terrifying.”

“Do you all think that Diao Yong perished together with these puppets?”

“That’s impossible. Diao Yong was killed by some powerful Immortal Weapon and combat technique. Although these puppets are strong, they can’t use any combat techniques and don’t have any weapons. Plus, nothing is left inside the palace. This indicates that the treasure has already been taken by someone. We’d better leave this palace now. We can’t afford to provoke the person who could even kill Diao Yong.”

“Do you all think that the attacker was Jiang Chen?” someone asked.

“Not possible. Jiang Chen is merely a half-step Divine Immortal.

Despite his heaven defying talent and power, he strength is not yet enough to kill Diao Yong. Besides, both of them had already fought two days ago, and Jiang Chen was no match for Diao Yong back then.”

Somebody shook his head, feeling that this matter was unrelated to Jiang Chen. Although Jiang Chen was formidable, there was no way for him to be strong enough to kill Diao Yong. Furthermore, not only was Diao Yong killed, he didn't even seem to have the chance to escape as well.

The group departed quickly. Diao Yong had died here. So, this wouldn't be a pleasant place to linger around.

Not long after the group left, Jiang Chen walked out of the pagoda and left the palace stealthily, continuing his journey towards the depths of the tomb.

The news about Diao Yong's death spread out fast. This was the first time that a genius half-step Golden Immortal died ever since the ancient tomb has been opened. A lot of people were guessing about the culprit behind this, especially the experts of Profound Sun Sect. Every one of them were incredibly furious. Diao Yong's death wasn't a minor loss to Profound Sun Sect. Now, they're starting to regard the other sects as their enemy, especially the people of Skycloud Pavilion. After all, both sects had never really gotten along well. So, it was only logical to associate Diao Yong's death with Skycloud Pavilion.

When this news reached Jiang Chen's ears, he smiled. It didn't matter to him if the other would suspect him, he didn't have any intention of reconciling with Profound Sun Sect anyway.

“A fight has started. A fight has started over there!”

Suddenly, someone yelled. Everyone, including Jiang Chen, turned towards that direction. Flames were all over the place. The combat waves had already spread to the horizon. Two silhouettes were flickering back and forth in the void. They were engaging in

an inextricable fight.

“It’s Bu Qingfeng of Skycloud Pavilion and Tuo Hai of Profound Sun Sect. I had never thought that the two of them would appear here. These two experts are famous figures in One-Line-Sky. They represent the true pinnacle of the young generation.”

“That’s right. This is because they have already surpassed everyone and has reached the true level of Golden Immortal realm. Both of them were always at odds. It’s only normal that they would fight in this encounter.”

“Let’s go over and watch. Watching such a tremendous battle would surely be beneficial to us.”

.....

A large number of cultivators flew towards that direction. It wasn’t easy to encounter an intense battle like this.

Chapter 1290 - The True Tomb Pit

Jiang Chen stood far away with his arms crossed while his eyes were focusing on the battle ahead. It was also out of his imagination that there would be such a formidable expert in One-Line-Sky. This improved his views of the geniuses in One-Line-Sky by a notch.

In the sky, Bu Qingfeng was wearing a white robe and was holding a combat sword. His strikes were so great that it could slash open the earth. Each of his attacks gave people the sense of oppression. The energy was as vast as the ocean and the pressure was as heavy as mountains.

On the other side, Tuo Hai wasn't showing any quarters either. The black Heaven-Opening Axe was similarly powerful. This showed that the both of them favored strength. People like them would have insatiable craving when it came to battling. They had already exchanged blows a few hundred times in just a short period of time, but neither victory nor defeat could be determined.

"It's impossible for these two experts to decide the outcome of the battle in such a short period of time." Jiang Chen shook his head.

"They are equally matched. I've already lost count of how many times such a battle has occurred, but no winner has ever been determined."

A figure emerged next to Jiang Chen. It was Guo Jie. He quickly came over to Jiang Chen's side when he saw him.

"Your cultivation has improved again. It seems like you have gotten some good benefits."

Jiang Chen glanced at Guo Jie and felt that Guo Jie's Qi was stronger than before, seemingly about to advance to the half-step Golden Immortal realm soon.

“I did get some benefits, but compared to Brother Jiang, mine is insignificant.”

Guo Jie smiled. As a well-known core disciple, it was imaginable how arrogant he was during normal days. He was afraid that only Jiang Chen could make him say such a word.

Jiang Chen smiled back; then shifted his attention back to the battle in front.

It only showed that Jiang Chen was greatly interested in the battle between Bu Qingfeng and Tuo Hai. So, Guo Jie spoke: “Bu Qingfeng of Skycloud Pavilion, Tuo Hai of Profound Sun Sect, Huangfu Zhan of Huangfu Family, and Yun Canglan of Yun Family, these names are the pinnacle figures amongst the young generation in One-Line-Sky.”

While recalling these four geniuses, Guo Jie’s eyes couldn’t help staring at Jiang Chen. He suddenly felt that these four individuals seemed to lack something. Apart from Jiang Chen’s current cultivation, they were totally not on the same level.

“It seems like this ancient tomb will get very busy this time.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He initially thought that the strongest of the young generation who entered the ancient tomb were half-step Golden Immortal experts, but now, it seemed like that wasn’t the case. Aside from those half-step Golden Immortals, there were also four truly powerful geniuses.

He tried to calculate using the Great Divination Art. Given his current cultivation, even if he used the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd, he still wouldn’t stand a chance before these four experts. Anyone should know that those were true Golden Immortal experts. The moment he advanced to the Divine Immortal realm, he would probably be strong enough to fight them, but in order to eliminate these opponents, he would at least need to advance to the mid Divine Immortal realm. He could already gauge Bu Qingfeng and Tuo Hai’s power just from this battle. Geniuses like

them were incomparably strong. Despite them being only Golden Immortal experts, their combat strength could already match any ordinary mid Golden Immortal expert.

“Of course, this expedition is a place for us to train and also a place for all the young generation of the four major powers to confront each other. How can it be peaceful with so many geniuses confronting one another? Right, Brother Jiang, I wonder if Diao Yong’s death has anything to do with you.” Guo Jie probed.

“I killed Diao Yong,” Jiang Chen said.

“What?”

Guo Jie exclaimed. Although this thought had already crossed his mind, he never really thought that it was really Jiang Chen who killed Diao Yong. If this was spread out, he was afraid that it would cause a major uproar.

If it was before, he would surely treat Jiang Chen’s words as fart, but currently, he didn’t have the slightest doubt about what Jiang Chen had said. Because of this, he had changed his way of looking at Jiang Chen. Perhaps, Jiang Chen was the real genius. Comparing Bu Qingfeng and the other three geniuses to Jiang Chen, how were they any greater? It was only a matter of time before Jiang Chen surpassed them.

“Don’t be too surprised. I have plenty of means. Killing one Diao Yong is nothing,” Jiang Chen said indifferently.

Guo Jie couldn’t help but sigh in his heart. He couldn’t imagine what kind of freak this person who stood before him was.

“Brother Jiang, I’ll follow you from now on in Skycloud Pavilion.”

Guo Jie cupped his fists at Jiang Chen, showing his sincerity. He was an intelligent person. He could already see Jiang Chen’s unparalleled talent. Jiang Chen’s future achievement would surely be incredible and unimaginable. If he could follow such a person,

he would certainly reap boundless benefits in the future.

Jiang Chen turned and patted Guo Jie's shoulder. It was extremely beneficial for him to be able to have a genius like Guo Jie by his side. Guo Jie was a rare genius amongst the core disciples in Skycloud Pavilion. That meant that Jiang Chen would have a certain prestige and influence in the core disciples. The moment he ruled the entire Skycloud Pavilion in the future, he had to make every one of them convinced, and now was the time to expand his influence.

Hong Long...

In front, Bu Qingfeng and Tuo Hai were still entangled in battle. Sounds of collision were heard incessantly. All of a sudden, a palace below trembled restlessly when it was greatly affected by the combat waves of the two. Seeing what happened, the two geniuses immediately stopped their fight and looked at the palace below.

They both understood that such a battle was pointless even if they prolonged it. The ancient tomb was what they were looking for. The most important thing for them was to find the true tomb pit first. Due to the influence of their combat powers, the pit below responded. It was very likely that this was the true tomb.

The battle halted. Everyone's eyes shifted to that agitating palace, seemingly about to collapse at any moment.

"Look, that palace is trembling. This is something that has never happened before."

"That's right. It must have been affected by Bu Qingfeng and Tuo Hai's battle that it responded greatly. However, I wonder if this is really the true tomb."

"The tremble is getting stronger. Could it be that the place is going to collapse?"

.....

Many experts were shocked. By this time, countless of experts were present – rogue cultivators, geniuses of the four major powers, half-step Golden Immortals and the four Golden Immortal geniuses, which meant that Huangfu Zhan and Yun Canglan were also here. All of their eyes were fixed at the shaking palace.

Hong Long.....

Suddenly, a rumble was heard from inside the palace. Then, a strong energy rushed out from it. Under the powerful impact of the force, the whole palace was blown away and was completely destroyed. Smoke filled the scene.

Within the foggy air was an ancient door that emerged by itself.

Chapter 1291 - The Icy and Fiery World

Everyone was shaken at this very moment. Needless to say, this hidden gateway that materialized all of a sudden must be the true ancient tomb as they were already in the deepest part of this place. There must be tremendous secrets and treasures hidden in this pit. As such, there was no way they wouldn't be excited by this.

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up, staring at the door unblinkingly. The huge door seemed partly hidden and partly visible like it was surreal, or it had existed for far too long as it was brimming with mysterious brilliance.

When all the smoke disappeared, the sight of the door became clearer. The door was bright with colors. There were two colors. One was scarlet, like it had a raging fire burning on it, whereas the other was the total opposite. It was as spotlessly white as jade and filled with the Qi of coldness. It gave everyone the taste of ice.

Ice and Fire were enemies of each other, but this door was no doubt, had these two different Qis'. How was it possible for two distinct Qis' to exist so harmoniously into one gate?

"This door is truly mystical. It is rare to have both Ice and Fire fuse together."

"The person who crafted this door certainly has a very powerful skill. Fire and Ice are always incompatible with each other, but now, they have merged with each other. I wonder what kind of secrets is hidden behind the door."

"The secrets in this ancient tomb is far greater than our imagination. It seems like we can only find out by going inside."

.....

No one wasn't surprised. This strange portal must be connected to the depths of the tomb. By this time, a lot of people had already developed a strong interest about the real ancient tomb. They all

wanted to know what kind of secret was hidden inside. More importantly, there were rare treasures inside.

Jiang Chen, however, wasn't astonished by the fact that Ice and Fire could co-exist together harmoniously as it was an incredibly easy thing for him. After cultivating the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal, not only could he merge Ice and Fire effortlessly, but also the five elements with different attributes.

Gradual change was observed on the fiery icy door. The icy part of the door was vanishing, leaving the red fiery part that was covered with raging flames. Runes were flickering within the sea of fire.

"What happened? Why has the door changed? The icy door has just vanished." Guo Jie was puzzled.

"If I'm guessing it correctly, behind this doorway are two totally opposite spatial zones. One with fire and another with ice. The current door must be leading to the world of fire. As for the icy door, it should be located behind the fiery door, where the true ancient tomb should be situated at."

Jiang Chen guessed. The more complicated the mechanism, the more it showed the uniqueness of the person who built this tomb. Currently, Jiang Chen was totally intrigued by the world behind the icy door.

"The door of the ancient tomb has opened. Let's go in and check it out!"

Someone shouted, but before his voice faded, four silhouettes moved at an incredible speed, appearing outside the doorway in just a blink and vanishing into the fiery door without hesitation.

Everyone shook their heads helplessly when they saw what happened. With the presence of these four individuals, they shouldn't think about getting the valuable treasures anymore. Those four experts were precisely the pinnacle figures of One-Line

Sky's Young Generation. They were Bu Qingfeng of Skycloud Pavilion, Tuo Hai of Profound Sun Sect, Huangfu Zhan of Huangfu Family and Yun Canglan of Yun Family. All of them were formidable Golden Immortal experts. No one would dare to compete with them unless that person was already tired of living.

After the four flew into the fiery doorway, several half-step Golden Immortal experts of the four major powers followed. Every one of these half-step Golden Immortal experts were outstanding talent in their own sect, like Diao Yong. No one would dare to look down on them. They had their own reputation even in One-Line-Sky, surpassing the majority of young generation.

“Come, we’ll go in too.”

Many of them started to move, scrambling for the fiery doorway, fearing that the treasures would be gone if they were any slower.

“Brother Jiang, let’s go in together,” said Guo Jie.

“Let’s go.”

Jiang Chen naturally wouldn’t miss this chance. The real show had just begun. They turned into two rays of light and disappeared in the fiery door.

Hua La La.....

The world inside was exactly the same as what Jiang Chen expected. Fiery wind blew towards them the moment they entered the door. If they were ordinary cultivators, they wouldn’t be able to withstand such a scorching heat wave and would immediately suffer serious injuries.

Jiang Chen waved, sweeping away the scorching wind. The world ahead was totally a world of fire. It wasn’t a huge spatial zone. It only had a ten mile radius in size. Fiery waves were drifting everywhere in the void, making the entire spatial zone look fiery red. Some weaker cultivators had to circulate their Immortal Qi to resist the waves after waves of fire.

“What a fierce fiery wave! Who on earth would live inside here?” Almost all of the cultivators expression turned grim.

“There’s a land of magma ahead. Let’s go over and have a look.”

Someone pointed towards the front, only to hear the incessant roars of the rolling ocean waves.

Whizz... *Whizz...* *Whizz...*

One by one, silhouettes flew ahead. Very quickly, a huge number of cultivators came to the land above the ocean of magma, which had occupied almost half of the entire spatial zone. The temperature here was incredibly high. Many cultivators couldn’t bear it. They felt that their skin was drying, breaking, and would burn at any time.

“Motherf*cker! The magma here is truly horrifying. The heat waves it emanated is so strong. I’m afraid that no one would be able to withstand the heat if one dived into the magma.”

Someone cursed, feeling that the magma was overly abnormal.

Hong Long.....

The roar of the magma continued. Waves were breaking along the edge of the land, emitting the scent of destruction that drew fear out of everyone.

A lot of them looked around, scanning the entire spatial zone with their divine sense, but no treasures could be found. Eventually, their gazes shifted back to the magma.

“There can’t be no treasure here. The treasure must be inside the magma.” Huangfu Zhan said.

“That’s right. This turbulent magma must be hiding some kind of terrifying treasure.”

Tuo Hai nodded, agreeing to what Huangfu Zhan had said.

In fact, even Jiang Chen felt that the magma was exceptional. If there were benefits here, it must be located deep in the magma.

Chapter 1292 - The Heart of the Magma

The magma churned like tidal waves. Its heat wave billowed into the sky. At this time, majority of the cultivators had already lost hope in getting the treasure. If the treasure was truly hidden in the magma, there was no way they could get it. It was impossible, unless they didn't want to live.

“Let me try the temperature of the magma.”

A genius half-step Golden Immortal from Yun Family stepped forward to the edge of the land, took a deep breath, and leaped into the magma.

Puff!

His entire body submerged in the burning liquid. But he flew out from it as soon as he entered.

He came back to the shore. His body was shivering and twitching while he was circulating his energy to force the heat poison out of his body. Although he had been in the magma for only a second, his current state differ too much a second ago. Apparently, he had suffered a terrible blow. Red color spread all over his face.

“Scary, that's too scary. This magma not only has very high temperature, it also has heat poison. The flames created by the magma can even burn my protective barrier of Immortal Qi. If I were a little slower, I'm afraid that I wouldn't be able to get out of it.”

That half-step Golden Immortal was terrified, thinking about the horror of the magma ocean. He felt fortunate that he got out of it in time. Instantly, he lost his interest in the treasure below, or it could be said that he had lost the courage to pursue it.

Hiss.....

Plenty of geniuses suck in a breath of cold air when they saw what happened. Fear started to glint in their eyes as they stared at

the magma. If not even a half-step Golden Immortal genius could withstand that kind of temperature, what made them capable of doing so?

At this time, they were afraid that only Bu Qingfeng and the other three had the ability to enter the ocean of magma. However, it was still unknown how long they could stay submerged in it. After all, no one really knew how terrifying the magma was.

“That’s scary. How could such a horrifying ocean of magma exist in the ancient tomb? If treasures are really down there, they have to be extraordinary treasures.”

“There’s no need to think about it. No matter what kind of treasure it is, it has nothing to do with us anymore, as we can’t even dive into the magma. Besides, Bu Qingfeng and the other three are still standing there. How can we possibly compete with them for the treasure?”

“We’ll see if Bu Qingfeng and the other three can get into the magma to obtain the treasure.”

.....

No one wasn’t afraid and many had already given up. Even the haughty half-step Golden Immortals had already backed away from this deadly challenge. The scariness of the magma had exceeded everyone’s imagination. Even the four pinnacle geniuses were frowning tightly. A glimmer of fear flashed past their eyes as they looked at the churning magma below.

The four of them were the first to arrive here, but they were now standing in the void above the magma. None had mustered enough courage to dive into the magma despite them being Golden Immortals.

The scene was incomparably quiet. Everyone kept their silence, but there was one person who was smiling pleasantly. This wasn’t his first time experiencing this. Back in Saint Origin World, he had

encountered a similar situation. And because of that, Tyrant had gotten the blood-red stone monument.

However, the magma in front of him seemed so fierce that not even the Golden Immortals would dare to go in.

Nevertheless, no matter how strong the heat poison or how high the temperature was, it wouldn't affect Jiang Chen. With the True Dragon Fire and True Thunderfire protecting his body, and the Fire Dragon Seal that could fuse with any flames in the Heaven and Earth, such a magma wouldn't be a big deal to Jiang Chen. He would be as powerful as he was on land in the magma.

However, Jiang Chen wasn't in a hurry to act. He wanted to observe the situation to at least determine what kind of treasure was inside the ocean of magma.

Hong Long...

Suddenly, the sea of magma below turned restless. Then, a one meter long fire dragon sprang out of the ocean. It seemed lifelike and real. It was tossing its head and tail, trying to mount a challenge on every one of them.

“Look, that's a miniature fire dragon. What's that?”

“Its flame origin is very pure. It has to be the heart of the magma. My God! This magma has already formed its own heart and this dragon is its heart. If we can obtain this heart, our benefits would surely be boundless.”

“Sure enough, there are precious things here. This fire dragon is the treasure that we are looking for. The value of this heart is immeasurable.”

.....

Seeing the fire dragon, many of them exclaimed. Those with keen eyesight could already see that this was the heart of the ocean, which was the true treasure. No one could tell how much this heart was worth. If a cultivator who practiced fire attribute

techniques refined this heart, his cultivation would improve by leaps and bounds, reaching an incredible stage.

Numerous eyes brightened up, including Jiang Chen's. He had always been searching for ways to improve his cultivation. This heart would precisely allow him to advance to the early Divine Immortal realm or even the peak of early Divine Immortal realm.

“It's the heart of the magma.”

Huangfu Zhan acted. He struck out a huge palm at the fire dragon. A powerful and destructive Qi waves rolled in the air across the ocean. The huge palm fell down like Mountain Tai, capturing the fire dragon in the fist.

“Haha... this heart is mine.”

Huangfu Zhan laughed, but his smile didn't last for long. In the next moment, the fire dragon slipped out of his palm, it leaped back into the ocean and vanished.

“Someone is being too impetuous. It isn't a good thing to celebrate too early.” Yun Canglan said sarcastically.

“Humph! Yun Canglan, what's with the arrogance? If you are so good, go and get the fire dragon in the ocean.”

Huangfu Zhan harrumphed coldly. Letting the fire dragon slip away from his grip made him lost face and Yun Canglan's sarcasm had undoubtedly put him in an even angrier mood. If this was said by another person, he wouldn't think twice before slapping the person to death.

“I will. Once I get into the ocean, that heart of magma will surely be mine.”

Yun Canglan said, he then leaped into the ocean for real. Seeing this, Bu Qingfeng and Tuo Hai followed hastily. The last one to jump was Huangfu Zhan. They didn't act earlier because they weren't sure what the treasure was. Now that they knew that it was the heart of magma, they would try everything to get it.

Although the magma was terrifying, they were very confident in their own strength.

Chapter 1293 - There Was No Impact

The four great experts finally dived into the magma. Countless of eyes fell upon them, especially the genius half-step Golden Immortal who had jumped into the lethal magma first. He knew how scary the magma ocean was better than anyone. Even if it was the four of them, it wouldn't be easy for them to obtain the heart.

The four geniuses were no longer visible. They had completely submerged themselves in the ocean of magma.

"The magma is too horrifying. It had even formed its own heart. I wonder if they can capture that fire dragon." Guo Jie said.

Standing next to him, Jiang Chen smiled, but didn't speak. His perception was beyond everyone's imagination. He could already feel the scariness of the magma. Even a Golden Immortal wouldn't be able to stay too long in it if he didn't have extraordinary techniques, much less capturing the crafty fire dragon.

Three minutes later.

Bang! *Bang! *Bang! *Bang!

Four shadows rushed out of the magma almost at the same time. They were precisely Bu Qingfeng and the other three geniuses. Their faces were pale, their bodies were drenched with sweat and were shivering while standing on the shore. They stared at the magma below in horror, dumbstruck.

"It seems like it would be another wild goose chase. The scariness of this magma is far beyond our imaginations. Even Bu Qingfeng and the other three could do nothing about it."

"They are already considered pretty good to be able to hold on for three minutes. It seems like the fire dragon is a very cunning one. It won't be an easy thing to bring it under control."

"If they can't even do it, no one else can."

.....

Almost all of them were sighing. Despite their number, they had to shrink back at the sight of the magma. By now, those wiser experts had already figured out one thing. That icy door that they saw earlier was connected to the fiery door, which meant that the icy door was just after the fiery door, but the other door was nowhere to be found. According to their speculation, the icy door would appear again once someone got ahold of the magma's heart.

Inside the icy door was where the real ancient tomb was. In other words, if no one managed to capture the fire dragon, their trip into this tomb would be wasted, as they hadn't even gone into the real ancient tomb. If this would really happen, many of them would feel dissatisfied.

The four geniuses didn't say a word. Being in the magma for three minutes had consumed too much of their energy. Now, they needed time to recover, but judging from their faces, they still hadn't given up on the fire dragon yet. It seemed like they were planning to dive into the ocean again once they had recovered.

"It seems like no one will be getting that heart." Guo Jie shook his head.

"I can try." Jiang Chen smiled, then strode forward.

"You can't be reckless, Brother Jiang. This magma is too horrifying. Not even a Golden Immortal can stay in it for long." Guo Jie sounded worried.

"There's no harm."

Jiang Chen had a relaxed look. His body accelerated forward and vanished into the ocean with a puff.

"Who was it? Who just leaped into the magma?"

Someone shouted. The originally silent scene became restless. Due to Jiang Chen being too quick, most of them didn't see clearly who the person was. Furthermore, no one else would dare to jump

into the magma after seeing the condition of the four geniuses. It was undoubtedly an act of seeking death.

“It was Jiang Chen! He has jumped into the magma. He really has too much of a nerve.”

“That’s right. I saw it too. It was precisely Jiang Chen.”

“Jiang Chen is being too arrogant. Not even the Golden Immortals can stay there for long, isn’t he just seeking his death by jumping straight into it? Did he really thought of himself as a god?”

“We’ll see. I estimate that he won’t be able to last ten seconds.”

.....

The restlessness among the crowd intensified. Many of them thought that Jiang Chen wouldn’t even last one second. Although Jiang Chen had a heaven defying talent, his cultivation was still too weak. If not even a Golden Immortal like Bu Qingfeng could withstand such a temperature, how could Jiang Chen possibly withstand it?

“Humph! An insect-like person wants to compete with us? That’s just ridiculous!”

Tuo Hai of Profound Sun Sect snorted, totally not putting Jiang Chen in his eyes.

“Is that so? However, it’s such a pity that Profound Sun Sect has suffered huge losses because of him and he’s still very alive. Isn’t that an irony?”

Bu Qingfeng remarked sarcastically. He had never seen Jiang Chen before, but he had heard of Jiang Chen’s name for a long time. This genius who had just recently risen to fame was beginning to create legends in One-Line-Sky, and he had become very well-known in the ancient tomb.

“This bastard has also killed a genius of our family. I’m going to

slaughter him right away the moment he comes out of the magma.” Yun Canglan said.

Ten seconds passed in a blink while they were waiting for Jiang Chen to come out. Then, a minute passed, but no sign of him could be found, as though he had sunk into the depths of the magma.

“What happened? Could it be that Jiang Chen could really withstand the heat for a minute? This is impossible. I could only stay there for a second. What kind of a joke is this?”

The half-step Golden Immortal who was the first one to dive into the magma was shocked.

“That bastard sure is amazing for staying in there for so long.”

“I don’t think so. He may not even have the ability to come out of the magma and has already been incinerated into nothingness by the burning lava.”

“That’s right. He must be dead after such a long period of time. Besides, he’s merely a half-step Divine Immortal, he wouldn’t be able to hold on for so long.”

.....

One minute might seem very short, but it was already long enough for those who had suffered the horror of the ocean. Almost all of them didn’t believe that Jiang Chen could stay in the magma for one minute. Majority of them concluded that Jiang Chen had already died in the incinerating magma.

The current Jiang Chen was being lashed by the heat and flames while being in the ocean of magma, but none of these waves affected him. Instead, under the circulation of the Fire Dragon Seal, the flames were absorbed into his body as nourishment.

Apart from that, his body was covered by a layer of flames – the combination of True Dragon Flame and True Thunderfire. Those were the fire of the Heavens and Earth, the king of all fire. Any flames that confronted these two flames would automatically

yield.

Therefore, after Jiang Chen entered the magma, he wasn't affected in the least. He could move freely like a fish in the ocean, totally unhindered.

“The magma here is truly scary. If the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is able to absorb all of the energy here, it won't have problems condensing another two levels.”

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled. He immediately ripped open the door of the pagoda. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda could absorb any kind of energy and the energy in the magma was no exception.

Chapter 1294 - Refining the Fire Dragon

Hu... *Hu...*

A violent suction burst out from the doorway of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Tremendous scorching energy was being absorbed by the pagoda. The twenty-second level of the pagoda began to glow brilliantly after receiving the massive amount of energy. The pagoda only absorbed the energy in the magma, instead of the hot liquid rock.

As for Jiang Chen, he was interested only in the heart. He swept around with his divine sense, but found no trace of the fire dragon. This was something that he had already anticipated. The fire dragon had already developed its own intelligence and was extremely cunning. Additionally, it was the heart of the magma, which made it a part of the magma. So it was virtually impossible to locate it in this ocean of magma.

“Even if Bu Qingfeng and the others wandered here for a day and a night, they still wouldn’t be able to find a trace of the fire dragon.”

Jiang Chen sneered, but he wasn’t worried about it. He had all the time in the world right now. Given the appetite of the pagoda, it wouldn’t have a problem sucking away all of the energy in the magma.

The fire dragon would lose its calm as the energy was being absorbed by the pagoda. By that time, it would definitely show up and Jiang Chen had full confidence that he could capture and then refine it.

Hu... *Hu...*

Due to a great deal of energy being absorbed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, it caused the ocean of magma to churn more intensely. Layers of magma waves roared violently. Half an hour

passed like a blink. During this period, a third of the energy in the magma had already been absorbed by the pagoda. The twenty-second level had already been fully condensed. Jiang Chen had gotten tremendous benefits from it. The number of his dragon marks was increasing continuously.

At this time, all of the people outside the magma were unsettled, Jiang Chen had been in the magma for far too long. Since he dived into the magma, the ocean became even more violent, waves kept on rolling unceasingly. The experts could already sense the continuous decline in its energy. This might be an indication that Jiang Chen was still alive.

If Jiang Chen was still alive after half an hour of being in the magma, it would be horrifying to all of them and would freeze their brains temporarily.

“Motherf*cker! Is this Jiang Chen a monster or something? Could he still be in that magma for half an hour? I thought that he was already dead from the beginning, but since he vanished into the magma, changes kept occurring in it. Furthermore, do you all sense that the heat in the magma has been reduced by a third? Why would the energy be reduced all of a sudden? This must have something to do with Jiang Chen.”

“Jiang Chen must still be alive and all these changes are related to him. What has this bastard done in the magma?”

“Dammit! How could he last for so long in there? All of us only lasted for a maximum of three minutes in the magma.”

.....

A lot of people were dumbstruck, particularly Bu Qingfeng and the others. They were the top geniuses in this place. In spite of that, they could only stay in the magma for three minutes. Jiang Chen, on the other hand, had submerged himself in the magma for so long and had reduced so much of the heat in the magma already, which was unacceptable to them.

The four great geniuses were almost fully recovered. Based on their original plan, they would dive into the magma once more to find the fire dragon, but due to the magma churning so intensely right now, they didn't dare dive inside as they didn't know what exactly was happening inside.

In the magma, Jiang Chen was sitting cross-legged like a still mountain, allowing the fiery waves to lash at him frantically, but all of these didn't have any impact on him.

Suddenly, Jiang Chen's eyes opened and stared at a distance not far away and saw the vague image of a fire dragon.

Upon seeing this, the corner of his mouth revealed a cold smirk. "It showed up at last."

Instantly, he used the Great Soul Derivation Technique. Invisible spiritual energy flowed like water and transformed into a big net, enveloping the fire dragon within. Now that the fire dragon was trapped in this net, it became virtually impossible for it to escape.

Jiang Chen struck his True Dragon Palm.

A huge blood-red dragon claw emerged, fully containing the fire dragon inside. It struggled to resist. As the fire dragon was merely the heart of the magma, it didn't have a very powerful attacking strength. Although it could manipulate the magma to attack, it still couldn't make a scratch on Jiang Chen, making it lose the biggest and only advantage that it had.

Just like being caught by Yun Canglan's palm, the fire dragon should be able to escape this grip, but there was something different in this situation. Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm was fully enshrouded by a layer of flames. The True Dragon Flame and True Thunderfire had combined to weave a fiery net, totally enveloping the fire dragon within.

"Roar..."

The fire dragon let out roars. Its eyes began to reveal fear. This

was supposed to be its territory, which should be impossible for anyone to restrain it, but now, with the presence of the True Dragon Flame and True Thunderfire, it was terrified, these two flames were the king of fire. Even the heart of the magma had to submit to it.

It couldn't move while under the control of the king of fire, let alone channeling the energy of the magma. It had now been turned into a helpless prey of Jiang Chen.

“There's no need to struggle as it's of no use.”

Jiang Chen pulled the fire dragon closer to him and launched the Fire Dragon Seal. The Fire Dragon Seal turned into a fiery dragon that opened its huge mouth and devoured the fire dragon, then returned to Jiang Chen's body.

Hiss...

A violent energy exploded from his body. The energy was so tremendous that only an abnormal being like Jiang Chen could withstand it. If he was replaced by an ordinary person, his body would have burst into pieces under such a terrible impact.

The dragon transformation skill!

It was necessary for him to circulate the dragon transformation skill at this time. The heart of the magma was then gradually being refined by Jiang Chen. Huge amount of dragon marks were condensed incessantly, enhancing Jiang Chen's strength.

The heart of magma must not be devoured by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, or else it would only become the pagoda's nourishment and Jiang Chen could only obtain a portion of the benefits. If he refined the heart of magma directly, the surge of pure energy would allow him to advance to the early Divine Immortal realm or even to the peak of early Divine Immortal realm.

Hong Long.....

The ocean continued to churn. After the heart of magma was gotten by Jiang Chen, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda's absorption speed increased. At this rate, it wouldn't take long for the pagoda to fully absorb all the energy in the magma.

Chapter 1295 - Peak-Early Divine Immortal Realm

“The ocean of magma is boiling. Everyone, get back!”

“Son of a b*tch! What the hell did that Jiang Chen do? Why has he created such a huge commotion?”

“It’s true that the magma is churning violently, but its energy is at least less than it was before by half. If it continues at this rate, I’m afraid that all of the energy in the magma will be gone for good. If there’s really such a skill that can deplete so much energy, it would certainly be very terrifying.”

.....

The restlessness in the ocean intensified. No one knew exactly what was happening inside, but there was one thing they were sure of – everything that was happening must have something to do with Jiang Chen. After all, all these phenomena started right after Jiang Chen dived into the magma.

In the magma, Jiang Chen and the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda were absorbing massive amount of benefits and experiencing major changes. To Jiang Chen, all of these benefits were like an enormous treasure. This was what they called great fortune and luck.

One thousand, two thousand.....ten thousand.....

The energy in the heart was extraordinary, and with the help of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, the number of new dragon marks in Jiang Chen’s Qi Sea started to accumulate in thousands. Such a speed couldn’t just be described as ‘terrifying’.

In other words, Jiang Chen’s cultivation base would surely improve by leaps and bounds without worrying about his foundation.

Soon, 50 000 dragon marks had already been fully condensed. By this time, the total number of dragon marks in Jiang Chen's body had already reached 700 000, the precise mark for early Divine Immortal realm.

Buzz... *Buzz...*

The dragon marks inside his body became restless. A large number of Immortal Meta Stones were being refined and absorbed. In a matter of blinks, Jiang Chen's cultivation had broken through to the early Divine Immortal realm. With his current combat strength, he wouldn't need the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd anymore to kill geniuses like Diao Yong.

700 000 dragon marks was definitely still far from reaching the peak of the realm. By now, only a portion of the heart was refined. New dragon marks continued to form inside his body. From his estimate, even if these benefits weren't enough to push his cultivation to the intermediate Divine Immortal realm, it would be more than enough for him to reach the peak of the early Divine Immortal realm. By that time, he would be pretty close to the intermediate Divine Immortal realm and could easily make an advancement.

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was like an abyss. Half of the twenty-third level had already been formed. As time went by, tremendous amount of black coals were seen after too much energy was drained from the magma. Those were the remnants of the magma that had no energy left.

A situation like this raised numbness in people's scalp.

"My God! What exactly has happened here? This magma has existed for countless number of years and it has even formed its own heart, but now, it's disappearing. More than half of its energy is already gone."

"It's Jiang Chen. It has to be him. That bastard isn't dead yet. I have no idea what kind of technique he is using to make the energy

in the magma disappear. If that's the case, he must have already gotten the heart already."

"Dammit! What kind of monster is he? How can he be so heaven defying?"

.....

At this point, no one was able to remain calm anymore as the scene was too terrifying and unimaginable. None of them knew what was happening here, but they knew that Jiang Chen was the one responsible for all of these.

Bu Qingfeng and the other three were shocked even more. They wanted to know what was happening inside more than anyone. They even had the urge to leap into the magma to check the situation out, but they decided otherwise and just waited. If the heart was really gotten by Jiang Chen, they surely wouldn't let him go.

Bu Qingfeng belonged to the same sect as Jiang Chen, so Jiang Chen didn't pose much of a threat to him. The other three geniuses on the other hand were already gnashing their teeth. As long as Jiang Chen resurfaced, they were going to exterminate him at once.

"If that son of a b*tch has really obtained the heart of magma, I will never let him go." Yun Canglan said.

"That's right. That bastard should have died a long time ago. He still has the wondrous rock with him. What rights does he have to possess such divine and mystical rock?" Tuo Hai spoke coldly.

"We'll get rid of him later. However, we better discuss how to divide the heart of magma and the wondrous rock now." Huangfu Zhan said.

"Are the three of you treating my existence as nothing? Shouldn't you ask for my permission first before killing a genius of my pavilion?"

Bu Qingfeng chided coldly, however, one could tell from his frown that he was already feeling incomparably worried now. After all, he wouldn't stand a chance if he were to fight these three geniuses together. By that time, he wouldn't be able to save Jiang Chen even if he interfered.

"It doesn't matter whether you agree or not. Jiang Chen is going to die today. Our three major powers are going to exterminate him today. So Bu Qingfeng, do you think your sole strength can save Jiang Chen's life?" Tuo Hai sneered.

"Humph!"

Bu Qingfeng harrumphed coldly, but didn't speak another word and refocused his gaze on the magma below.

In another dozen minutes, even more residues of magma appeared below. Almost all of the energy had been consumed. The condensation of twenty-third level of the pagoda had already been completed and a third of twenty-fourth level had been formed.

It was astounding. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda grew more divine. The dragon marks on it were glowing vividly and continuously. It had moved another step close to thirty-third level. Once the thirty-third level was condensed, a part of the pagoda's secret would be unlocked.

At this moment, Jiang Chen had already completely refined the heart of magma, helping him condense another 40 000 new dragon marks, reaching the total of 740 000 dragon marks in his Qi Sea, the peak of early Divine Immortal realm. He was now left with 10 000 more dragon marks to advance to the intermediate Divine Immortal realm.

Even if he didn't advance to the intermediate Divine Immortal realm, his current combat strength was already terrifying enough. There was certainly a huge difference in his combat strength compared to before.

With his present combat strength, he could easily kill any half-step Golden Immortal in his dragon form. And it would be impossible for an early Golden Immortal genius like Yun Canglan to kill him. Even if Jiang Chen couldn't kill those geniuses, he wouldn't have a problem fighting them.

Hua La!

At last, the last bit of the energy in the magma had been absorbed into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The huge doors of the pagoda closed and the condensation stopped halfway to the twenty-fourth level. The magnificent ocean had now been turned into a land of black coals with billowing smoke.

Chapter 1296 - The Smell of Gunpowder

The temperature in the magma was no longer high, except for some residual temperature. Anyone could stand on the shore right now without using their Immortal Qi to withstand the heat. Countless pair of eyes were staring below. Everyone was taking deep breaths as a scene like this was too mystical. There was a very big difference compared to the previously churning ocean of magma.

Apart from feeling shocked, they were also looking for a person, Jiang Chen. Such major transformation in the ocean must be related to him, however, except for the heaps of ruins and coals below, nothing else was found.

“This is simply too mysterious. The violently churning ocean has been turned into such a land. If I wasn’t seeing this with my own eyes, I wouldn’t have believed this.”

“Where’s Jiang Chen? Why is he nowhere to be found? Could it be that he has already been turned into one of the coals as well?”

“That isn’t right. Look over there! It looks like some kind of energy is about to burst out.”

.....

Everybody was shocked. Just as they were scanning for any signs of Jiang Chen, someone saw a trace of golden energy leaking out from the ruins, which immediately caught everyone’s attention, all of them knew that Jiang Chen was the main factor for everything that has happened in the magma.

Hong Long.....

Finally, an aura of tremendous force burst out of the ruins. Innumerable coals were blown away. A golden figure rushed out like a sharp sword and suspended in the void. He had a good-looking face, and domineering Qi was radiated between his brows.

His white robe fluttered in the breeze.

“Look! It’s Jiang Chen. Sure enough, he isn’t dead yet! My God! It seems like all the changes in the magma was really caused by him. He’s truly miraculous.”

“What kind of horrifying being is he? He’s truly monstrous and strange for creating so many miracles. Have you all noticed that his cultivation is a lot stronger than before, like he has already reached the peak of early Divine Immortal realm. I still remembered that he was merely a half-step Divine Immortal before he dived into the ocean. I couldn’t imagine that he would be able to get so many benefits within such a short period of time.”

“The heart of magma... he must have already refined the heart of magma, otherwise he wouldn’t have such a major improvement. This bastard’s luck is too good. He has already obtained the wondrous rock before this. And now, he has obtained the heart of magma as well. How can we ever accept this?”

.....

Jiang Chen’s emergence immediately set off a raging tide. No one wasn’t shocked. Even Bu Qingfeng and the other three geniuses could only stay in the magma for three minutes, but Jiang Chen was able to break their record. Although they had no idea what technique Jiang Chen had used to achieve this, it was no longer important because they could already see the outcome. They were almost sure that the heart of magna had already been obtained and refined by Jiang Chen. This could be discerned just from the changes in Jiang Chen’s cultivation.

“Dammit! The benefit has already been acquired by this bastard! What right does he have to acquire it?!”

Tuo Hai gnashed his teeth and said. A wave of cold killing intent surged in his body when he saw Jiang Chen appear in front of him.

“Kill him.” Yun Canglan said straightforwardly.

Tuo Hai, Yun Canglan and Huangfu Zhan locked their Qi on Jiang Chen simultaneously. It seemed like they wouldn't be giving Jiang Chen any chance of leaving. In the face of such a situation, Jiang Chen seemed indifferent, he had already expected it some time ago. Fighting these three geniuses was no longer avoidable from the moment he killed the geniuses of the three major powers.

The battle didn't concern him the slightest bit, his current strength was no longer the same as before. Although he was no match for these experts, it wouldn't be easy for Yun Canglan and the other two to kill him unless Jiang Chen just stood there obediently for them to kill him.

“Jiang Chen, you audacious son of a b*tch! How dare you kill the people of Huangfu Family?! Your only end today is death! As long as you hand over the wondrous rock and the heart of magma, I can assure you a quick and painless death.”

Huangfu Zhan said, totally not putting Jiang Chen in his eyes. Given the present situation, Jiang Chen was already a prey that had nowhere to run. He was already a dead man the moment he was surrounded by these three great Golden Immortal geniuses.

However, there were still many who thought that Jiang Chen wouldn't die so easily. Too many miracles had already been created by him. Previously, numerous experts wanted to kill him, but in the end, Jiang Chen was still alive, and those who pledged to kill him were all dead.

“That's right. As long as you give us the wondrous rock and the heart of magma, we will show you some quarters.”

Yun Canglan spoke in such a tone as though he was showing his greatest mercy to Jiang Chen.

“Are you all really treating me as nothing? None of you can kill the disciple of Skycloud Pavilion without going through me first.”

Bu Qingfeng said coldly, he then appeared before Jiang Chen in a

flash.

Seeing what happened, Jiang Chen nodded silently. During this crucial moment, the disciples of Skycloud Pavilion were able to unite together to confront the external threat, which was vitally important to a major power. In any case, Skycloud Pavilion was still a major power with human kindness. Looking at this from another angle, Ouyang He had already succeeded in leading his disciples into the right path.

“Bu Qingfeng, this has nothing to do with you. You’d better stay out of this. You are an intelligent man and I believe that you won’t make us your enemy just because of a bastard that you don’t even know.” Yun Canglan said.

“There’s no need to worry, Brother Bu. It’s undoubtedly a fool’s talk if they can really kill me.”

Without waiting for Bu Qingfeng to respond, Jiang Chen replied plainly in a sneering tone.

Such arrogance shocked not only the three geniuses, but also Bu Qingfeng, he was now looking at Jiang Chen in disbelief.

Yun Canglan was dumbstruck. Obviously, he hadn’t imagined that Jiang Chen would say such a word. Straight away, he burst into laughter. “Haha! Jiang Chen, you sure are arrogant, but unfortunately, arrogance needs to be backed by action. Your arrogance is merely ignorance. Since you don’t know what life and death is, I will teach you a good lesson.”

After he finished talking, Yun Canglan turned to Tuo Hai and Huangfu Zhan next to him. “The two of you go and deal with Bu Qingfeng. Let me handle this presumptuous brat myself. After that, we will divide the benefits equally.”

“Alright.”

Tuo Hai nodded in agreement. Then, he and Huangfu Zhan stared at Bu Qingfeng. Even though it would be impossible for

them to kill Bu Qingfeng, the two of them wouldn't have a problem stopping this genius Golden Immortal from helping Jiang Chen.

Chapter 1297 - The World behind the Icy Door

Now that they were attacking, they had already shown their will to kill Jiang Chen.

Bu Qingfeng's face was grim. Although he was a powerful Golden Immortal expert and an unsurpassed genius, his opponent was as good as him. Furthermore, there were two of them. To put it bluntly, with Tuo Hai and Huangfu Zhan together, he wouldn't stand a chance. As for Yun Canglan, it would be a piece of cake for him to take down Jiang Chen.

"Jiang Chen, I will find ways to stop them all. Escape now," said Bu Qingfeng.

"Thank you for your good intention, Brother Bu. In fact, Brother Bu doesn't have to get involved in this incident. They won't be able to catch me at all if I want to leave."

Jiang Chen said with a smile. His words were full of confidence. While it was true that his opponents were powerful, it was also true that he wasn't a weak cultivator.

The three of them moved at extreme speed, seemingly trying to reach Jiang Chen and Bu Qingfeng in milliseconds, but just as this moment, an unusual event happened.

Hong Long...

The ruins beneath the land rumbled. Subsequently, a brilliant pillar of light rushed out from below. As it reached the void, it formed a crystal-like illusory door very quickly. Waves of chilling wind rushed out from the doorway. That was the taste of profound ice.

The sudden change attracted everyone's attention, including those three geniuses who were launching attacks at Jiang Chen and Bu Qingfeng. All of them looked at the illusory door. They

were no stranger to this door. This was the door that had appeared with the fiery door before they came into this fiery spatial zone.

“Look, that’s the icy door. It is now opened after the heart of magma was gotten by Jiang Chen. Everybody, let’s go in quick. The real ancient tomb is just right behind that door.”

“That’s right. This is already the deepest part of the ancient tomb. Inside the icy door must be where the tomb pit really exists. Real treasures can be found inside. A treasure as good as the heart of magma was found in this fiery world, I’m positive that something even greater than the heart of magma could be found behind the icy door.”

“It seems like we all have to thank Jiang Chen. Without him, we won’t be able to open this door and enter the interior of the true tomb.”

.....

The sudden appearance of the icy door caused great pandemonium. All of them had lost the mood of watching the battle amongst the five geniuses. Some of them couldn’t wait and had already flown into the gateway.

Swoosh... *Swoosh...* *Swoosh...*

For a moment, one could see all the experts flying into the icy door. Anyone should know that this was the last door in the ancient tomb and the true secret of the ancient tomb lied behind this door. No one wanted to fall behind. They would probably have a higher chance of getting greater benefits if they entered the door first.

Seeing what happened, Yun Canglan and the other three knitted their brows, thinking that this wasn’t the right time for the icy door to emerge.

“The icy door has already appeared. Do you three still want to fight?” Bu Qingfeng said with a smile.

The three of them exchanged a glance and saw worry in each other's eyes. Of course, they wanted to kill Jiang Chen, but they also wanted to obtain the benefits in the ancient tomb, after all, it was their true purpose of coming in this place.

To them, killing Jiang Chen was easy, but the presence of Bu Qingfeng made it difficult. Even if they had the ability to kill Jiang Chen, they were afraid that they would need a certain amount of time. By then, all of the benefits inside the tomb would probably be taken away by the others.

“Humph! Jiang Chen, I will spare you just this time, but you will die sooner or later. When the icy door closes, it will be your turn to die.”

Yun Canglan threatened Jiang Chen, then flew speedily into the icy door.

“Jiang Chen, you won't be leaving this place alive.”

Tuo Hai threw another malicious words and vanished into the icy door along with Huangfu Zhan.

“Jiang Chen, the peace of the whole ancient tomb has been disrupted by you, but this is also good. I admire people like you the most. I will now go into the gateway. You can choose to leave or enter. If you leave now, they won't be able to do anything to you.” Bu Qingfeng said.

“Now that I'm here, why would I choose to leave? I'm determined to enter the icy door. As for the three of them, I didn't put any one of them in my eyes. It won't be a piece of cake for them to kill me.”

Jiang Chen chuckled, then vanished and appeared before the icy door.

“He's truly arrogant.”

Bu Qingfeng shook his head helplessly. Despite his pride, he had to admit that Jiang Chen was the most arrogant person he had ever

seen.

A fierce battle was supposed to break out if the icy door didn't open. Perhaps Jiang Chen's death was only a matter of time in the three geniuses' eyes, but this didn't apply to the treasures in the tomb pit. If they weren't fast enough, the treasures would be gone for good.

To Jiang Chen, this was a good thing as he didn't want to get entangled with those geniuses. He had already developed a strong interest in everything that exist in the ancient tomb, so he was also eager to find out what was behind the icy door.

In just about a minute, no one was left in the magmatic ruins. Everybody had rushed into the icy door.

In the icy door!

Similarly, it was another world, but this was a world of ice. This spatial zone was relatively similar to the fiery spatial zone. Its size was fairly the same, but it certainly wasn't a small spatial zone. Glaciers could be found everywhere. The coldness that drifted in the air was natural. It sent shivers down people's spine.

Jiang Chen scanned around and saw a boundless glacier world. The scene strongly resembled the Ice Land. When Yan Chenyu became the inheritor of the Ice God, she had gotten the recognition of the island and became the master of Ice World.

Of course, although these glaciers weren't as huge as the Ice World, its looks were a lot better. They were nobler, more beautiful and much more mysterious.

"Such a beautiful place. It doesn't seem anything like a tomb pit."

"Couldn't agree more. Look over there, that's an Ice Mountain that soared through the clouds. How spectacular!"

"Such a beautiful world. But we don't know what kind of secrets are stored in this place. Since it's an ancient tomb, there should be

some kind of coffin in here, but we haven't seen anything like that until now."

.....

Countless of people were astonished by the beauty of this world. Although this place was extremely cold, all of them were powerful Immortals. So they didn't have a problem resisting such coldness. Furthermore, there wasn't the slightest bit of death Qi in here or any sign of undead creatures like those Black Corpse Ravens. It was like the workmanship of nature.

The thing that they were concerned the most was what kind of secrets were hidden in this beautiful glacier world.

Chapter 1298 - The Ice Coffin

“Come over and look, everyone. The peak of the ice mountain seems glowing.”

Someone suddenly screamed and pointed to the summit of an ice mountain not far away. That was the tallest mountain in this glacier world. There was no sunlight in this spatial zone. The light came from the glacier itself, but the brilliance on top of the mountain was somewhat distinct.

“That’s right. There’s certainly some light glowing on top. Could it be that the secrets of this ancient tomb is hidden there? Let’s go over and find out.”

“Don’t act rashly. Places like this are generally dangerous. Have you all forgotten about the magma? We should let the stronger experts go first.”

.....

Every movement in the glacier world aroused the notice of all the experts. When the icy door was opened, the light on top of the ice mountain became so bright that every one of them could notice it from afar.

“Let’s go. The treasures’ over there.”

Yun Canglan’s eyes lit up, then flew over to the top of the ice mountain. Observing what happened, Bu Qingfeng naturally followed closely from behind.

Since there were strong experts taking the lead, the remaining experts did not wait any longer. The crowd began flying towards the summit in a sequence that looked like a dragon.

Bang!

Just before everyone could reach the top, a blast suddenly rang out from the mountainside, causing a crater on the side of the

mountain. Chilling Qi was spewed out from it like a cold wave.

“Argh...”

Someone was caught off guard by the chilling wave. With a wail, the person was instantly turned into a human popsicle and froze to death.

“Not good. The cold Qi here is too strong. An ordinary Heaven Immortal won’t be able to withstand it.”

Someone yelled and many hastily back off. Even the powerful Divine Immortal experts were forced to exert their energy to defend against this incredible cold Qi. At least dozens of people were killed by this freezing wave. As a matter of fact, Heaven Immortals were capable of resisting these waves. It was just that no one had ever thought that this kind of situation would happen, much less knowing the scariness of these cold waves, which was why their guards were lowered, allowing the cold Qi to suddenly invade their innermost soul, freezing their soul and causing them to die on the spot.

A great deal of cold Qi continued to spurt out from the large hole, causing the temperature of the entire glacier world to drop drastically. Many of their eyes fell upon that huge opening. By now, even the most foolish person would know that the true treasure was right in that freezing hole.

“The light from the summit came from the treasure inside the crater. So the secret of the ancient tomb is just inside this hole.”

“That’s right, but I wonder what kind of secret is inside.”

“Let’s go in and take a look, however, I suggest those who were below late Heaven Immortal realm to stay outside, or else you will very likely be frozen to death.”

.....

The appearance of the icy hole had attracted everyone’s attention, but many of them groaned and secretly grumbled about

their weak cultivation. The cold wave just now already showed that experts of Heaven Immortal realm would find it very difficult to resist the cold Qi. The cold Qi that rushed out from the hole was cold enough to kill them. If they went into the hole, they would probably have higher chances of getting frozen to death.

“Be careful while entering the hole.”

Bu Qingfeng turned towards the group of Skycloud Pavilion disciples and reminded. He was clueless of what dangers were present inside. Putting the danger aside, the cold Qi alone was enough to terrify them.

A while later, under the lead of the four great geniuses, a large number of cultivators began entering the ice cave. Although Heaven Immortal experts were excluded from this expedition, there were still a lot of them who were of Divine Immortal realm and above.

The core disciples of the four major powers were all Divine Immortal experts. In this expedition, more than half of the core disciples had joined. Of course, that number was still lesser than the majority of them – the rogue cultivators, a group of cultivators that couldn't be overlooked.

The scene inside the ice cave was similarly beautiful. Because of the shine of the crystal, the long icy hole seemed incomparably bright instead of dark.

The experts stayed alert at all times while walking in the ice cave. Although they hadn't met any danger so far, the cold Qi was getting scarier the further they walked. Even though they were only half-way through the ice cave, the late Heaven Immortal experts were already shivering and having trouble resisting the coldness. The blade-like freezing Qi was unbearable to them.

“No way. I can't hold on anymore. It looks like I'm not fated to obtain the treasure.”

Someone sighed, then stopped in his track. He had no choice but to return. He wasn't the only person who retreated, and most of them were rogue cultivators. The inner sect disciples of the four major powers were still able to withstand the coldness up until now, they had greater defensive strength. Plus, they had the help of many Divine Immortal core disciples, so they wouldn't have a problem reaching the end of the ice cave.

Jiang Chen was walking in the crowd of Skycloud Pavilion disciples. Plenty of them had changed the way they looked at him. There were fear, admiration and respect.

Although the surrounding temperature was freezing, it didn't have an impact on him. He didn't know why the further he moved forward, the more uneasy he felt, like there was something he was concerned of inside the cave, he had never felt such a sensation before.

“What kind of secret is hidden in this ice cave? Why could it affect my mind?”

Jiang Chen frowned. He didn't like this kind of feeling, but this made him more eager to find out what exactly it was.

Very quickly, they reached the end of the ice cave without encountering any obstacle and danger along the way, which was unexpected to everyone.

The scene ahead astonished everyone, because it was totally different from what they had imagined.

The cold Qi there was thicker and colder, but because they were all powerful experts they withstood the temperature.

In front of them was an ice palace. That was right. It was an ice palace with four walls of solid ice. Due to the shine, it caused the entire ice palace to look splendid and colorful.

“Look, there's something over there, on top of an altar. It looks like an ice coffin!” someone exclaimed.

Many of them were already looking at the ice coffin before someone even shouted. There was only a 30 meter tall altar in the ice palace. It was built out of solid ice. Some mysterious runes could be vaguely seen from it. On top of the altar was a large ice coffin that no one knew how long had existed.

Chapter 1299 - Immortal Burying Coffin

The ice coffin was made out of ten-thousand-year-old ice. One could feel its extreme coldness and heaviness just by looking at it.

Its top was enshrouded with icy mist and the inside couldn't be seen clearly.

Many of them attempted to use their divine sense to see what was inside the ice coffin, but they were blocked by some ancient seal. This had made them even more suspicious of the thing that was hidden inside the coffin. Someone guessed that it might be the creator of the tomb.

When Jiang Chen saw the ice coffin, he felt even more uneasy. He didn't like this kind of inexplicable feeling, but the feeling was real. He used the Great Soul Derivation Technique to check what was inside the coffin, but the result was the same as the others.

“Inside the coffin has to be the creator of the ancient tomb. How long did this coffin really existed?”

“Let's go over to the altar and take a look. I think treasures must be hidden inside.”

“That's right. Let's go. Since we have come all the way here, we can't return empty handed. We've got to get something no matter what.”

.....

Many people couldn't wait to move forward, especially Bu Qingfeng and the other three geniuses. They were the strongest here, so the cold Qi had the least impact on them. Plus, their desire to obtain the treasure inside the ice coffin was beyond everyone else.

Tuo Hai leaped onto the altar. Seeing that he was safe, everyone followed suit. As the altar was large, it wouldn't be a problem even if all of them stood on it.

Just a moment passed and all the cultivators were already on top of the altar, but due to the coldness of the Qi reaching a terrifying degree, the late Heaven Immortals could no longer withstand it even with the help of the Divine Immortal experts. In fact, even the ordinary early Divine Immortal experts were having difficulty resisting the coldness, giving them no time to care for their juniors.

“No way. The cold Qi here is too strong. We can’t bear it.”

Someone shook his head helplessly and leaped off the altar.

Now that they were on the altar they began to observe the ice coffin once more at a closer distance. At the front of the coffin, under the mist, they could vaguely see some talisman marks, but the noble and ancient Qi exuded from it made them not dare to look at it directly.

At the center of the innumerable talisman marks was a larger ancient word. It flickered a few times before the experts could catch what that word was. The word was ‘BURIAL’. It was old, ancient and honorable. It radiated a Qi that stimulated people’s soul. If a person’s gaze didn’t move away from it, he would likely to be sucked away by the ice coffin.

“Immortal Burying Coffin. My God! This is Immortal Burying Coffin!”

All of a sudden, Bu Qingfeng exclaimed. He felt so excited that his body was trembling. It was a shock which he couldn’t feign, like he had just seen the most unbelievable thing in the Heavens and Earth.

As the words came out of Bu Qingfeng’s mouth, it caused a commotion in the crowd. Everyone’s expression changed, they seemed as shocked as Bu Qingfeng. Tuo Hai and the other two were no exception. Perhaps, they had never seen an Immortal Burying Coffin before, but all of them knew about the legend of this name.

“It’s really the Immortal Burying Coffin. According to legends, the Immortal Burying Coffin was made by Great Sovereign Emperor Zang Xian, a supreme figure that could move across the entire Immortal World unhindered and was on par with the Immortal Execution King. In the legends, the Immortal Burying Coffin was a peerless weapon that had buried countless of experts. It was said that the formidable Immortal Sovereign died in his Immortal Burying Coffin,” someone explained.

When he recalled the legends of the Immortal Burying Coffin, he couldn’t help mentioning Great Sovereign Zang Xian who was also known as the supreme Immortal Sovereign, an ancient existence.

“Why would the Immortal Burying Coffin emerge in a small place like One-Line-Sky? What kind of secret existed in this ancient tomb? Could it be that the one who is lying in the ice coffin is the Great Sovereign Zang Xian?”

Another person guessed, which immediately gave everyone the creeps. Even Bu Qingfeng and the other geniuses couldn’t help retreating several steps. Their faces paled. Zang Xian was a formidable and majestic Immortal Sovereign. Even if the body lying before them was merely a corpse, it would still scare them to death. Not just them, even the mighty Immortal Kings or Immortal Emperors or Immortal Venerables wouldn’t dare to approach the Immortal Burying Coffin.

“Not possible. Great Sovereign Zang Xian is an existence that couldn’t die. Who else in the entire Immortal World can kill him? however, there’s no explanation as to why the Immortal Burying Coffin was here.”

Somebody shook his head, but his fear for the coffin didn’t reduce in the slightest bit. The influence of Great Sovereign Zang Xian was so great that it could shock the whole Immortal World.

The emergence of the Immortal Burying Coffin was enough for everyone in the world. Despite having the powerful Sovereign’s

Weapon in front of them, none of them dared to have any greedy thoughts. Even if this Natal Weapon of an Immortal Sovereign was given to them as present, they wouldn't dare accept it as this wasn't any kind of joke.

Great Sovereign Zang Xian... Immortal Execution King... these two unparalleled figures were drifting in Jiang Chen's head. Their names alone showed how powerful they were. They were supreme existences in the Immortal World. However, something related to them were discovered in an insignificant tomb in One-Line-Sky. First was the Immortal Execution Broken Sword, and now was the Immortal Burying Coffin. This showed how extraordinary the secrets in this ancient tomb were.

Human Immortal, Earth Immortal, Heaven Immortal, Divine Immortal, Great Luo Golden Immortal, Immortal King, Immortal Emperor, Immortal Venerable and Immortal Sovereign. Of all the nine great realms, Immortal Sovereign realm was the highest and the formidable Great Sovereign Zang Xian and Great Sovereign Immortal Execution were the pinnacle existences amongst the Immortal Sovereigns. Anyone would tremble in fear just by hearing their names. Anything that was related to them could shake not only the Ethereal Immortal Domain, but the whole Immortal World.

“What's actually hiding inside this ice coffin?”

Jiang Chen frowned. Instinctively, he believed that there must be some secret existing in this ice coffin.

Countless of them stood rooted to the ground. No one dared to move a step forward. The deterrent force of the Immortal Burying Coffin was no joke to anyone. This piece of coffin was the greatest treasure in the ancient tomb, but no one was qualified to wield it. Even Tian Muyun wouldn't dare to possess it. Who else would dare to touch the item of Great Emperor Zang Xian?

No one believed that the Great Sovereign Zang Xian was already

dead as they all knew that a Great Sovereign was a being that wouldn't die, an existence that was incredibly near to God Dao, a level that they couldn't even reach in their dream.

Just as everyone was in a dilemma, a sudden change occurred in the ice coffin. The mist and cold Qi on top of the coffin was fading away by itself.

Chapter 1300 - Immortal Execution Order

“Look, the mist’s gone. The inside of the coffin is getting clearer.”

Someone shouted, but with controlled volume. Everyone was tensed once more while the mist continued to reduce. No one had a clue what was going to happen next. All their desire to obtain the treasure had already faltered and reduced, only wanting to see what the secret of the coffin really was.

Any kind of desire was just an extravagant thought before the Immortal Burying Coffin. Even if the Great Sovereign Zang Xian had really fallen, this piece of Sovereign Weapon couldn’t simply be possessed by anyone. Every Great Sovereign Weapon had its own spirit. It was they who chose their master and not the other way round.

Jiang Chen’s expression suddenly became extremely tensed. He had always been tough, and seldom experienced enormous fluctuations in his emotions, but as soon as all the mist was gone, some kind of strong emotion was stirring inside of him. Such emotion was unexplainable, but he was sure that this was connected to the secret inside the coffin.

Everyone was staring at it unblinkingly. All the mist had finally disappeared, revealing only the ice coffin. The word ‘BURIAL’ became even clearer now. Neither of them dared to look at it for too long, fearing that they wouldn’t be able to take it.

Subsequently, they saw a female corpse lying inside the ice coffin.

The corpse seemed incomparably serene. She was clad in white clothes. Even though her eyes were closed, it still couldn’t hide her peerless beauty. Any beautiful thing or being that was used to describe her appearance would only degrade her real beauty, because nothing could match her beauty.

There was a unique chilling disposition on her body, as if she had fully integrated with the entire ice palace. On top of her body was a layer of frost. Any person with keen eyes would be able to see that the layer of frost was the ten-thousand-year-old Ice Marrow, which was also the material that Great Sovereign Zang Xian had used to build the coffin. It was a precious and rare material.

“She’s beautiful.”

“So beautiful...”

“How could there be such a pretty lady in the Heavens and Earth? Even though it’s a corpse that has existed for unknown number of years, she’s just as pretty as the snow lotus on the ice mountain.”

.....

Innumerable experts exclaimed in surprise. Not just males, even females who came here were subdued by the corpse’s unparalleled beauty.

No one knew the origin of the female corpse or why she was lying in the Immortal Burying Coffin, but there was one thing they were sure of—this female corpse surely wasn’t Great Sovereign Zang Xian, everyone knew that the Great Sovereign was a man, a truly domineering man.

Currently, Jiang Chen was completely stunned. He gaped at the corpse and was at a loss of words, because her appearance was too familiar. Someone he couldn’t never think of even in his dream.

“Xiao Yu, no, what exactly has happened?”

Jiang Chen was losing control over his emotions. The female corpse inside the coffin wasn’t someone else, it was Yan Chenyu. No matter how composed Jiang Chen was, his mind would be thrown into chaos under such circumstance. Why would Yan Chenyu emerge in the Immortal Burying Coffin in the Immortal World? What kind of secret was involved in this?

“Could it be she isn’t Xiao Yu and only has the same looks as her? But the Qi exuded from her is just like Xiao Yu’s. Besides, why did I feel so uneasy before this? I didn’t have any relation to Great Sovereign Zang Xian. That uneasiness must’ve come from Xiao Yu. Could it be that she is already dead?”

Jiang Chen’s emotions fluctuated greatly. Despite his smartness, he felt helpless. He didn’t know how to deal with this situation.

Yan Chenyu had the Nine Yin Meridians and was an inheritor of Ice God. The Qi radiating from the coffin was the same as Yan Chenyu’s. Therefore, Jiang Chen couldn’t help linking the two of them together. If something were to happen to Yan Chenyu, he wouldn’t be able to take it.

“Look, everyone, there’s an order token on the ice coffin.”

Suddenly, someone spoke and pointed to the golden order token on the ice coffin. It was lackluster and gave people the feeling of dullness. Some experts vaguely saw the two words engraved on the order token – Immortal Execution.

“That’s the Immortal Execution Order! My Goodness! There is actually such a huge secret in this miniature ancient tomb. This must be related to the two peerless Great Sovereigns.”

“This is really the Immortal Execution Order. In the whole Immortal world, no one would dare to use such token. It is said that the person who obtains the Immortal Execution Order can ask a favor from the Immortal Execution King. Motherf*cker! This is the treasure of the world! There’s no way of getting this Immortal Burying Coffin anymore, but with this Immortal Execution Order, I’m going to be super rich!”

“It’s a pledge made by the Immortal Execution King. That’s something that can’t be replaced even with countless of treasures.”

.....

No one could stay calm. Their expression was beyond

astonishment. This quiet piece of token would surely shake the entire Immortal World.

“Haha! The Immortal Execution Order is mine!”

In the face of such temptation, a Divine Immortal rogue cultivator raced forward like a crazy man. Plenty of people would lose their minds in front of such a rare and priceless token.

“Argh.....”

Something unusual occurred. The Immortal Execution Order wasn't something that was easy to get. Before the rogue cultivator could even get close to the ice coffin, he let out a wail and his body exploded. The blood and internal organs that fell out from the body were instantly frozen before dropping onto the floor along with the body like a statue.

Hiss.....

Everybody sucked in a breath of cold air. Those who were about to make a move froze in their tracks. The scene was too horrifying. The cultivator died so quickly and without warning.

“That's the invisible power radiating from the Immortal Burying Coffin. It seems like the ice coffin is related to the female corpse.”

“Do not act recklessly. It's too dangerous. The Immortal Execution Order isn't something that can easily be obtained. You may die if you get near to it.”

“However, go ahead if you want to try, perhaps the Immortal Execution Order will also choose its own master. If someone has enough luck to get the acknowledgement of the token, that person will prosper.”

.....

The atmosphere became restless all of a sudden. The emergence of the Immortal Execution Order had affected the hearts of all the people here. But due to the failure of the first person, no one dared

to make a move now. That was horrifying. A single mistake could cost them their lives. Even if the Immortal Execution Order was probably finding its master or the female corpse inside the coffin was controlling all of these, no one dared to test their luck, because death was irreversible.

Even Bu Qingfeng and the other geniuses didn't dare make half a step forward. Although they were Golden Immortal experts, standing before the Immortal Burying Coffin, they were no different than Divine Immortal experts. They wouldn't dare to joke around with their lives. They were now just waiting to reap the profits if the chance presented.

Table of Contents

[Dragon-Marked War God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 1201 – Heavenly Vision realm!](#)

[Chapter 1202 – Setting Off](#)

[Chapter 1203 – The Dragon Travelling Across the Ocean](#)

[Chapter 1204 – The Desperate Females](#)

[Chapter 1205 – Big Brother Jiang](#)

[Chapter 1206 – Plain Speaking](#)

[Chapter 1207 – Yan Qingcheng's Bitter Experience](#)

[Chapter 1208 – The Lord of Evil](#)

[Chapter 1209 – Lascivious Young Master](#)

[Chapter 1210 – Havoc in Lascivious City](#)

[Chapter 1211 – How Disgusting!](#)

[Chapter 1212 – The Strength of Barbaric Bulls!](#)

[Chapter 1213 – Battle Strategy](#)

[Chapter 1214 – The Practical Usage of the Great Divination Art](#)

[Chapter 1215 – The Dramatic Boost](#)

[Chapter 1216 – Early Heaven Immortal realm](#)

[Chapter 1217 – The Aggrieved Lascivious Young Master](#)

[Chapter 1218 – There's No Way to Run](#)

[Chapter 1219 – Fragrant Sky City](#)

[Chapter 1220 – Countermeasure](#)

[Chapter 1221 – Frenzied Dragon Leaves the Pool](#)

[Chapter 1222 – Spiritual Spring and Soul Essence](#)

[Chapter 1223 – Making a Profit in a Troubled Situation](#)

[Chapter 1224 – Everything is in Vain](#)

[Chapter 1225 – Fifteen Level](#)

[Chapter 1226 – Mid Heaven Immortal Realm](#)

[Chapter 1227 – Pounding Violently](#)

[Chapter 1228 – The Sixteenth Level](#)

[Chapter 1229 – The Fierce Combat in the Wilderness](#)

[Chapter 1230 – The Power of the Heavenly Dragon Combat Halberd](#)

[Chapter 1231 – The Crisis in Fragrant Sky City](#)

[Chapter 1232 – Time is Running Out](#)

[Chapter 1233 – The Mighty Return](#)
[Chapter 1234 – There are No Rules except Life and Death](#)
[Chapter 1235 – Conquering](#)
[Chapter 1236 – Boundless of Benefits](#)
[Chapter 1237 – It's Just the Beginning](#)
[Chapter 1238 – The Chaos in the Outer Region](#)
[Chapter 1239 – Attack the Cities and Seize the Lands \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 1240 – Attack the Cities and Seize the Lands \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 1241 – Attack the Cities and Seize the Lands \(3\)](#)
[Chapter 1242 – The Infuriated Big Yellow](#)
[Chapter 1243 – Cruelty](#)
[Chapter 1244 - Reign of Terror](#)
[Chapter 1245 - Reinforcements](#)
[Chapter 1246 - The Shocking Power of the Demonic Devil](#)
[Chapter 1247 - Fierce and Cruel](#)
[Chapter 1248 - The Last Two Cities](#)
[Chapter 1249 - Confidence](#)
[Chapter 1250 - Sir Liu](#)
[Chapter 1251 - Another Demonic Devil](#)
[Chapter 1252 - Brothers Reunited Once More](#)
[Chapter 1253 - Taking Control of the Outer Region](#)
[Chapter 1254 - The God Shaking Monument](#)
[Chapter 1255 - The Evil Lord's Bearing](#)
[Chapter 1256 - The Tranquillity Before the Storm Comes](#)
[Chapter 1257 - The Attack of Demonic Devils](#)
[Chapter 1258 - Heaven Defying Means](#)
[Chapter 1259 - Late Heaven Immortal realm](#)
[Chapter 1260 - 630 000 Dragon Marks](#)
[Chapter 1261 - Evil City](#)
[Chapter 1262 - Straight to the Point](#)
[Chapter 1263 - Yang Bufan](#)
[Chapter 1264 - Returning to One-Line-Sky](#)
[Chapter 1265 - Big Event](#)
[Chapter 1266 - Ancient Tomb](#)
[Chapter 1267 - Seeing Tian Muyun Once More](#)
[Chapter 1268 - The Time Limit of Seven Days](#)
[Chapter 1269 - The Mysterious Living Thing](#)
[Chapter 1270 - Black Corpse Raven](#)
[Chapter 1271 - Extinguishing Countless Number of Them](#)

[Chapter 1272 - Jiang Chen's Return](#)
[Chapter 1273 - The Growing Sphere of Influence](#)
[Chapter 1274 - Advancing to the half-step Divine Immortal realm](#)
[Chapter 1275 - The Great Unrest](#)
[Chapter 1276 - The Wondrous Rock](#)
[Chapter 1277 - Strike](#)
[Chapter 1278 - Uprooting](#)
[Chapter 1279 - Reckless Act](#)
[Chapter 1280 - Two Consecutive Kill](#)
[Chapter 1281 - Diao Yong of Profound Sun Sect](#)
[Chapter 1282 - Fighting the half-step Golden Immortal](#)
[Chapter 1283 - Exploring the Secret of the Wondrous Rock](#)
[Chapter 1284 - The Depths of the Ancient Tomb](#)
[Chapter 1285 - Dried Corpse Puppet](#)
[Chapter 1286 - Immortal Execution](#)
[Chapter 1287 - Killing Intent](#)
[Chapter 1288 - Extinguishing Diao Yong](#)
[Chapter 1289 - Golden Immortal Genius](#)
[Chapter 1290 - The True Tomb Pit](#)
[Chapter 1291 - The Icy and Fiery World](#)
[Chapter 1292 - The Heart of the Magma](#)
[Chapter 1293 - There Was No Impact](#)
[Chapter 1294 - Refining the Fire Dragon](#)
[Chapter 1295 - Peak-Early Divine Immortal Realm](#)
[Chapter 1296 - The Smell of Gunpowder](#)
[Chapter 1297 - The World behind the Icy Door](#)
[Chapter 1298 - The Ice Coffin](#)
[Chapter 1299 - Immortal Burying Coffin](#)
[Chapter 1300 - Immortal Execution Order](#)